

Ex  
Libris  
BEATRIX  
FARRAND

REEF POINT GARDENS  
LIBRARY

*The Gift of Beatrix Farrand  
to the General Library  
University of California, Berkeley*

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

LONDON      EDINBURGH      GLASGOW      NEW YORK

TORONTO      MELBOURNE      CAPE TOWN      BOMBAY

HUMPHREY MILFORD

PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY

# SERBIAN GRAMMAR

BY

DRAGUTIN SUBOTIĆ

PH.D., MUNICH

AND

NEVILL FORBES, M.A.

READER IN RUSSIAN AND THE OTHER SLAVONIC LANGUAGES  
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

OXFORD

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

1918

SERVATION  
Y ADDED  
E-NAL TO BE  
AINED

25 1994

Add to Lib.

GIFT

## PREFACE

THE title of this book has been chosen for the sake of simplicity. The full name of the language is Serbo-Croatian. It must be emphasized that Croatian, except for slight differences of dialect and vocabulary, is absolutely the same language as Serbian, only written with the Latin alphabet with diaeritic signs. Knowledge of both the Cyrillic and Latin (Croatian) alphabets is indispensable to any student of Serbo-Croatian, therefore it is recommended to practise as much as possible the transcription of words written in Cyrillic into Latin, and vice versa.

In the *English* exercises the sentences have sometimes been framed according to the rules of *Serbian* syntax, in order to accustom the student to its peculiarities.

We wish to thank Mr. Šuvaković for the time and labour he has given us by helping with the accentuation.

D. S.

N. F.



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2008 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation



# CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	9
1. The Serbian Language . . . . .	9
2. The Alphabet . . . . .	10
3. The Pronunciation . . . . .	14
4. The different kinds of Sounds . . . . .	15
5. The Accent . . . . .	20
6. The Dialects . . . . .	22

## PART I

### CHAPTER

1. Easy Pronouns and Nouns . . . . .	25
2. The Present Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	31
3. Substantives and the use of the Cases without Prepositions . . . . .	36
4. Declension of Substantives . . . . .	44
5. Reading Exercise . . . . .	51
6. Personal and Demonstrative Pronouns, and the use of the Present Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	54
7. The Past Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	59
8. Adjectives (and Adjectival Adverbs) . . . . .	61
9. Declension of Adjectives . . . . .	64
10. The use of the Possessive Pronouns, and of the Adjectives with the Past Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	66
11. The Future Tense of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	73
12. Interrogative and Relative Pronouns, and the use of the Present, Past, and Future of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	76
13. The Imperative and the Conditional (and the Aorist) of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	81
14. The Comparative and Superlative of Adjectives . . . . .	84
15. The use of the Comparative and Superlative, and of the Conditional and Imperative of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	88
16. The Imperfect and Pluperfect of <i>to be</i> . . . . .	91
17. The Numerals . . . . .	92
18. The use of the Numerals . . . . .	99

# CONTENTS

## PART II

CHAPTER	PAGE
19. The Verbs : the Formation of the Infinitive and the Present . . . . .	101
20. Reflexive and Impersonal Verbs . . . . .	114
21. The Aspects of the Verb: their Meaning and Formation	121
22. Pronouns declined like Adjectives, and the use of the Present Tense of <i>to have</i> . . . . .	135
23. List of useful Verbs . . . . .	139
24. The Past Tense (Perfect or Compound Past) . . . . .	148
25. The Prepositions, and the use of the Present Tense of Verbs . . . . .	151
26. Definitive Pronouns, and the use of the Present and Past Tenses of the Verbs mentioned in Chapter 23 . . . . .	165
27. The Future Tense of <i>to have</i> , and of other Verbs . . . . .	169
28. Indefinite Pronouns and Adverbs . . . . .	170
29. The use of the Present, Past, and Future Tenses of <i>to have</i> , and of other Verbs . . . . .	172
30. The Imperative and Conditional of all Verbs . . . . .	177
31. Adverbs, and the use of the Imperative and Conditional . . . . .	179
32. The Aorist, Imperfect, and Pluperfect . . . . .	187
33. Conjunctions and Interjections . . . . .	189
34. The Participles . . . . .	194
35. The Order of Words and the Formation of Subordinate Sentences . . . . .	200
36. Reading Exercise . . . . .	215
37. Reading Exercise . . . . .	218
38. Reading Exercise . . . . .	220

# INTRODUCTION

## 1. THE SERBIAN LANGUAGE

THE Serbian language is one of the Slavonic languages,<sup>1</sup> and therefore also one of the family of Indo-European languages. It is spoken by more than ten millions of Serbs and Croats living in the following countries and territories : the kingdoms of Serbia and Montenegro, Bosnia and Hercegovina, Dalmatia and the islands, Croatia and Slavonia, in parts of Istria and in the former 'Serbian Duchy' (*Srpska Vojvodina*) in Southern Hungary, which includes the districts of purely Serbian nationality, known as *Baranja*, *Banat*, and *Bačka*. There are also large colonies of Serbs and Croats in the United States and in South America.

The language of both Serbs and Croats is, with the exception of inevitable differences of dialect and vocabulary, one and the same ; thus it is customary to speak of it as the *Serbo-Croatian language*. Very closely allied to the Serbo-Croatian language, of which it may be considered almost a dialect, is the language of the one and a half million Slovenes who inhabit the southern parts of the provinces of Styria and Carinthia, the province of Carniola, and the districts of Trieste and Gorica (Gorizia) in Austria. The Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes are all included in the term *Southern Slavs* or *Jugo-Slavs* (*jug*, pronounce *yug* = *south* in Serbian).

The Serbs, being members of the Eastern or Orthodox Church, use the alphabet known as the Cyrillic, the Croats and Slovenes, being Roman Catholics, use the Latin alphabet. The Cyrillic alphabet is also used in Russia and Bulgaria, i.e. by all orthodox

<sup>1</sup> The Slavonic languages fall into three groups, the Eastern (Russian, i.e. Great Russian and Little Russian), the Southern (Bulgarian, Serbo-Croatian, and Slovene), and the Western (Bohemian or Chekh or Czech, Slovak, Polish, and Lusatian-Wendish or Sorbish).

Slavs. The Latin alphabet, as used by the Croats and Slovenes, is the same as that used in England except for the fact that a few consonants have been furnished with diacritic signs to represent certain complex sounds.

The Cyrillic alphabet is so called after St. Cyril, who, with his brother Methodius, converted the Slavs in Moravia in the ninth century, and are known as the 'Slavonic apostles'. The Slavs of the Balkans were actually converted by their disciples. These two missionaries were Greeks of Salonica, but they knew the language of the Balkan Slavs, who at that time were already settled up to within a few miles of Salonica, and St. Cyril is credited with the invention of this alphabet to help the success of his mission, and to enable the Holy Scriptures to be written in the various Slavonic languages. This alphabet is founded on the Greek, but contains a number of letters representing sounds which did not exist in Greek. Some of these letters are supposed to have been borrowed from Semitic sources, others were freshly elaborated.

The foreigner should learn the Cyrillic alphabet, but he must also sooner or later make himself familiar with the language as expressed by the Latin alphabet. A knowledge of both alphabets is essential both from the literary and from the practical points of view.

It may be pointed out that the Cyrillic alphabet as used in Serbia and Montenegro, &c., is purely phonetic in that each single sign by itself represents one and only one sound in the language, which can hardly be said of any other European alphabet. Conversely, there are no sounds in the language other than those expressed by its alphabet. The same holds good of Croatian, except that one or two double letters are still used.

## 2. THE ALPHABET

The Cyrillic alphabet as used in Serbia consists of thirty letters. It originally contained more, but was reformed and simplified in the first half of the nineteenth century by the great Serbian philologist and author Vuk Stefanović Karadžić (1787–1864), who, by this means, brought it into complete accord with

the phonetics of the modern spoken language. Being originally founded on the Greek, the order of the letters is mainly that of the Greek alphabet. The Croatian alphabet naturally follows the order of the Latin, but in the accompanying scheme (pages 12 and 13) this order has been altered in order to show the correspondence between it and the Serbian Cyrillic.

The following is the Croatian alphabet in the order of the Latin letters, with the Cyrillic equivalents :

a A	а А	l L	л Л
b B	б Б	lj Lj	љ Љ
c C	ц Ц	m M	м М
č Č	ч Ч	n N	н Н
ć Ć	ћ Ћ	nj Nj	њ Њ
d D	д Д	o O	о О
dž ğ Dž	џ Џ	p P	п П
đ gj <sup>1</sup> Đ Gj	ђ Ђ	r R	р Р
e E	е Е	s S	с С
f F	ф Ф	š Š	ш Ш
g G	г Г	t T	т Т
h H	х Х	u U	у У
i I	и И	v V	в В
j J	ј Ј	z Z	з З
k K	к К	ž Ž	ж Ж

It will be seen that in several cases the Croatian Latin alphabet employs double letters or letters with diacritic signs over them where the Serbian Cyrillic constantly employs only one letter. It even has alternative signs to represent certain sounds, the reason being that uniformity of spelling in Croatia has not yet been achieved, while in Serbia it has, e.g. Serbian **ђ** can be represented in Croatian by **gj** or **đ** or **dj**, of which the first two are the most usual. Of the other alternative signs, **lj** is commoner than **l̇**, **nj** than **ñ**, **dž** than **ğ**.

The following is the Serbian alphabet in the order of the Cyrillic letters, with the Latin (Croatian) equivalents, and the cursive script in both alphabets :

<sup>1</sup> Also, less commonly, **dj**, **Dj**.

# CYRILLIC

# LATIN

Ord. No.	Printed	Written	Printed	Written	Pronunciation
1	а А	а А	а А	а А	English <i>a</i> in <i>father</i> .
2	б Б	б Б	б Б	б Б	English <i>b</i>
3	в В	в В	в В	в В	English <i>v</i>
4	г Г	г Г	г Г	г Г	English <i>g</i> in <i>go</i>
5	д Д	д Д	д Д	д Д	English <i>d</i>
6	ђ Ђ	ђ Ђ	đ (dj), Đ gj Dj	đ Dj Đj	{ A sound between the English <i>d</i> in <i>dune</i> and <i>j</i> in <i>John</i>
7	е Е	е Е	е Е	е Е	English <i>e</i> in <i>pet</i>
8	ж Ж	ж Ж	ž Ž	ž Ž	{ English <i>s</i> in <i>pleasure</i> French <i>j</i> in <i>jour</i>
9	з З	з З	z Z	z Z	English <i>z</i>
10	и И	и И	и И	и И	English <i>i</i> in <i>machine</i>
11	ј Ј	ј Ј	ј Ј	ј Ј	English <i>y</i> in <i>yet</i>
12	к К	к К	к К	к К	English <i>k</i>
13	л Л	л Л	л Л	л Л	English <i>l</i>
14	љ Љ	љ Љ	lj Lj	љ Lj	{ English <i>l</i> in <i>million</i> Italian <i>gl</i> in <i>egli</i>
15	м М	м М	м М	м М	English <i>m</i>
16	н Н	н Н	н Н	н Н	English <i>n</i>
17	њ Њ	њ Њ	nj Nj	њ Nj	{ English <i>n</i> in <i>new</i> French <i>gn</i> in <i>Boulogne</i>

## CYRILLIC

## LATIN

Ord. No.	Printed	Written	Printed	Written	Pronunciation
18	О О	o O	o O	o O	English o in <i>Olivia</i>
19	П П	ū Π	p P	p P	English p
20	р Р	p P	r R	r R	Scottish r in <i>merry</i>
21	с С	c C	s S	s S	English ss in <i>glass</i>
22	т Т	ū Т	t T	t T	English t
23	ћ Ћ	ћ Ћ	ć Ć	ć Ć	{ A sound between the English t in <i>tune</i> and ch in <i>chalk</i>
24	у У	y Y	u U	u U	English u in <i>rule</i>
25	ф Ф	ф Ф	f F	f F	English f
26	х Х	x X	h H	h H	{ Scottish ch in <i>loch</i> , English h (cf. p. 15)
27	ц Ц	cy Cy	c C	c C	English ts in <i>lois</i>
28	ч Ч	ч Ч	č Č	č Č	English ch in <i>chalk</i>
29	џ Џ	u џ U	dž, g, Dž	dž Dž	English j in <i>John</i>
30	ш Ш	u Ш	š Š	š Š	English sh in <i>she</i>

## NOTE ON FOREIGN WORDS

Foreign proper names when transliterated in Cyrillic are spelt 'phonetically', e.g.

*Shakespeare* = Шекспир ; *Glasgow* = Глазгоу or Глазгѡв ;  
*William* = Вильем ; *John* = Їѡн.

Foreign words as a rule have to conform to the Serbo-Croatian rules of phonetics and orthography, e.g.

*professor* = прѡфесор ; *engineer* = инжѡнѡр

## 3. THE PRONUNCIATION

The pronunciation of Serbo-Croatian is infinitely easier for English-speaking people than is that of any of the other Slavonic languages. The rule in Serbo-Croatian is 'to write as you speak and to speak as you write' (Vuk, cf. p. 10). The pronunciation of each individual letter is in all cases the same, therefore the only difficulty is to learn the value of each letter.

The vowels и, е, а, о, у are all pronounced 'openly' as in Italian, cf. p. 12 f.

The great majority of the consonants also present no difficulty whatever. The only consonants which call for special remark are the following : ш and ж, ч and џ, ǰ and ǣ.

ш is a *voiceless*<sup>1</sup> consonant exactly like English *sh* ; ж is the corresponding *voiced*<sup>1</sup> consonant pronounced like *s* in the English word *pleasure*, or like *j* in the French word *jour*.

ч is a *voiceless* consonant exactly like English *ch* in *chalk* ; џ is the corresponding *voiced* consonant pronounced like *j* in the English word *John*.

The only difficulty is with the two consonants ǰ and ǣ, though it is by no means insurmountable. To pronounce these two consonants the teeth must be brought close together and the lips slightly opened. The blade<sup>2</sup> of the tongue must cleave to the inside of the gums of the upper teeth and be slightly drawn

<sup>1</sup> The difference between a *voiceless* and a *voiced* consonant is that a *voiceless* consonant is pronounced with breath from the mouth *only*, while to pronounce a *voiced* consonant a stream of breath from the chest is necessary.

<sup>2</sup> The blade is the part of the tongue immediately behind the point and including it.



back at the moment when the stream of breath comes out of the chest through the mouth. The important point is that **ħ** is a *voiceless* and **ḥ** the corresponding *voiced* consonant. Thus **ħ** and **ḥ** correspond to **ч** and **џ** and are very similar to them in sound, only they are palatal consonants,<sup>1</sup> which **ч** and **џ** are not.

The consonant **x** before a consonant, as in **хв́ала**=*thanks*, is pronounced like *ch* in Scottish *loch*, but before a vowel like an ordinary English *h*, as in **ха̀ртија**=*paper*.

It is important also to notice the difference between **л** and **љ**, and between **н** and **њ**; **љ** and **њ** are the *softened* or *palatal* forms of **л** and **н**, just as **ħ** and **ḥ** are the *softened* or *palatal* forms of **т** and **д**. Their pronunciation is perfectly easy and natural for English-speaking people except at the end of words, a position in which for that matter these letters in Serbo-Croatian seldom occur; in the middle of words they sound like *l* and *n* in the English words *million* and *new*.

#### 4. THE DIFFERENT KINDS OF SOUNDS

##### 1. Vowels

Besides the five normal vowels—**a**, **e**, **и**, **o**, **y**—**р** can also rank as a vowel when it is (1) between two consonants, or (2) at the beginning of a word before a consonant; in these cases it is strongly rolled as in Scotland, e.g.

1. **Ср̀бин**=*a Serb (masc.)*; **т̀р̀говац**=*merchant*; **ч̀вр̀ст**=*firm*.<sup>2</sup>

2. **р̀ḥа**=*rust*; **р̀вати се**=*to wrestle*; **р̀ḥав**=*bad*.

**р** very seldom occurs as a vowel-sound before or after a vowel; when it does it is indicated by two dots, e.g.

<sup>1</sup> **ħ** and **ḥ**, besides being the result respectively of **т**+**ј** and **д**+**ј** (cf. p. 18), are also the result, in words of comparatively modern formation, of **к**+**ј** and **к**+**е**, **г**+**ј** and **г**+**е**, e.g. **ḥошак**=*corner* (from Turkish *kiushk*, cf. *kiosque*, a *pavilion*), **Ма̀ḥд̀онија**=*Macedonia* (**к**+**е**), **Ма̀ḥар** (also **Ма̀ар**)=*Magyar*, **Ḥ̀ор̀ḥе**=*George*, **ḥен̀ер̀ал**=*general*, though there is now no **к** or **г** audible in these words.

<sup>2</sup> Even in words of foreign origin, e.g. **тр̀пез̀арија**=*dining-room*, from the Greek *τραπέζιον*.

гъоце (3 syllables) = *throat* (diminutive).

зърѣати (4 syllables) = *to become rusty*.

All vowels, including *p*, may be either short or long.

### ‘ Movable A ’

Particular mention must be made of what is known as the ‘movable a’. In Serbian only the following four groups of consonants are possible at the end of words : ст, шт, зд, жд ; when a word would end in any other group than these, an *a* is inserted in the *nom. sing.*, but disappears in the other cases where the word naturally ends in a vowel ; but in the *gen. plur.* the *a* reappears in these words, a phenomenon caused by the fact that the invariable long *final a* of this case is of comparatively modern origin. E.g.

*Nom. sing.* кòнац = *cotton, thread*.

*Gen. sing.* кòнца.

*Gen. plur.* кòнāцā.

It is very frequent in the *nom. sing. masc.* of adjectives, e.g. жéдан (*masc.*) = *thirsty*, but жéдна (*fem.*).

In the case of foreign words practice varies ; thus one finds both фāкт and фāкат.

### Final л and о

Final л of a syllable, and especially of a word, very frequently becomes о. In words which originally ended in -ол in the *nom. sing.* the two о’s then combine into one long vowel, but the л reappears in the other cases, e.g.

вò (*m.*) = *ox*, *gen. sing.* вòла.

стò (*m.*) = *table*, *gen. sing.* стòла.

сò = *salt*, *gen. sing.* сòли, the *nom. sing.* of which was originally вол, стол, and сол.

In other cases the л appears as о after another vowel when final, reappearing in other cases, e.g.

бèо = *white* (*nom. sing. masc.*), but бéла = *white* (*nom. sing. fem.*), бéли = *white* (*nom. plur. masc.*). This phenomenon occurs most frequently in the past participle of the verbs, e.g.

ìмао = (*he had* (*masc. sing.*)), but ìмала = (*she had* (*fem. sing.*)).

It may also occur in the middle of words when л is at the end of a syllable, e.g.

сеоба = *migration* (originally селба).

владаоца, gen. sing. of владалац = *ruler* (e.g. *king*).

Cf. also Београд = *Belgrade* (lit. *the white city*, originally Бел-град).

## 2. Consonants

The consonants, according to the manner of their articulation, fall into the two groups :

1. Voiced : б, в, г, д, ђ, ж, з, џ.

2. Voiceless : п, ф, к, т, х, ш, с, ч, ц, х.

### *Rule of the assimilation of Consonants*

When a voiced and a voiceless consonant come together, assimilation takes place, i.e. both must be either voiced or voiceless : (1) a voiceless consonant becomes voiced before a voiced consonant, and (2) vice versa, e.g.

(1) свадба (*f.*) = *wedding* is derived from сват + ба (свѣт (*m.*) = *wedding guest*)

отаџбина (*f.*) = *fatherland* ,, ,, отач + бина (отац (*m.*) = *father*)

(2) српски (*adj.*) = *Serbian* ,, ,, срб + ски (србин (*m.*) = *Serbian (m.)*)

врапци (*nom. pl.*) = *sparrows* ,, враб + ци (врабац (*m.*) = *sparrow*)

Exceptions : д remains before с and ш, e.g.

председник (*m.*) = *president*.

одшкринути = *to open slightly*.

в never changes into ф and does not change preceding voiceless consonants, e.g.

кòлѣвка (*f.*) (not колефка) = *cradle*.

клѣтва (*f.*) (not кледва) = *curse*.

### MOST IMPORTANT PHONETIC RULES

1. The gutturals к, г, х are 'softened' when followed (1) by е and (2) by и, as follows :

1. (a) Before *e*, *κ* changes into *ч*, *г* into *ж*, *х* into *ш*, in voc. sing. of masculine nouns, e.g.

Nom. sing., *вѣк* (*m.*), *wolf*, voc. sing. *вѣче*.  
 ,, ,, *бѣг* (*m.*), *god*, ,, ,, *бѣже*.  
 ,, ,, *дѣх* (*m.*), *spirit*, ,, ,, *дѣше*.

(b) In the 2nd and 3rd person singular of the aorist tense (cf. p. 187 f.), e.g. *рѣћи* = *to tell*, *тргнути* = *to pull*.

1st p. *рѣкох*, *I told*, 2nd and 3rd p. *рече*.  
 ,, *тргох*, *I pulled*, ,, ,, *трже*.

(c) In certain words derived from those ending in these consonants, e.g.

*друг* (*m.*), *companion*; *дружити се*, *to keep company*.  
*кѣнак* (*m.*), *a hostel*; *кѣначити*, *to spend the night*.  
*сѣх* (*adj.*), *dry*; *сѣшити*, *to dry* (transitive).

2. Before *и*, *г* changes into *з*, *κ* into *ц*, *х* into *с*, in the nom. dat. voc. inst. loc. pl. of most nouns whose stems end in these consonants, e.g.

*бѣбрег* (*m.*), *kidney*, nom. voc. pl. *бѣбрези*, dat. inst. loc. *бѣбрезима*.

*вѣк* (*m.*), *wolf*, nom. voc. pl. *вѣци*, dat. inst. loc. *вѣцима*.  
*сирѣмах* (*m.*), *poor man*, nom. voc. pl. *сирѣмаси*, dat. inst. loc. *сирѣмасима*.

II. If *ц* and *з* are followed by *e* or *и*, they become *ч* and *ж*, e.g.  
*зѣц* (*m.*), *hare (masc.)*, voc. sing. *зѣче*, *зѣчица* (*f.*), *hare (fem.)*.  
*кнѣз* (*m.*), *prince*, ,, ,, *кнѣже*.  
*ѣтац* (*m.*), *father*, ,, ,, *ѣче*.

III. In the case of verbs whose roots end in *г*, *κ*, and *х*, these consonants coalesce with the *т* of the infinitive ending *-ти* and form *ћ*, cf. p. 102.

IV. The palatal consonant *j*, in such syllables as *-ja-*, *-je-*, *-ji-*, *-ju-*, affects most of the non-palatal consonants if they immediately precede it. Such consonants coalesce with *j* into one sound, as follows :

*д* + *j* = *ђ*, e.g. *млăђи* (*adj.*) = *younger*, derived from *млăд* + *ји*<sup>1</sup>  
*т* + *j* = *ћ*, e.g. *љўћи* (*adj.*) = *more angry* ,, ,, *љут* + *ји*

<sup>1</sup> *-ји* is the sign of the comparative.

з + j = ж, e.g. брѣжї ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>quicker</i> , derived from брз + ји	
с + j = ш, e.g. кйша ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>rain</i> „ „ кис + ја	
ц + j = ч, e.g. ўжичанин ( <i>m.</i> ) a <i>native</i> of Ужице „ „ ужиц + јанин	
н + j = њ, e.g. тѣњї ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>thinner</i> „ „ тан + ји	
л + j = љ, e.g. весѣље ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>joy</i> „ „ весел + је	
г + j = ж, e.g. дрѣжї ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>dearer</i> „ „ драг + ји	
к + j = ч, e.g. јѣчї ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>stronger</i> „ „ јак + ји	
х + j = ш, e.g. тїшї ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>quieter</i> „ „ тих + ји	

Further, if such consonants are in their turn preceded by з or с, these become respectively ж and ш, e.g.

грѣзд (*m.*) = *bunch of grapes*, but грѣжѣ (*n.*) = *grapes* (collective noun), from грозѣ = грозд-је.

лїст (*m.*) = *leaf, sheet (of paper)*, but лїшѣ (*n.*) = *leaves* (collective noun), from лисѣ = лист-је.

Бѣсна (*f.*) = *Bosnia*, but Бѣшњѣк (*m.*) = *a Bosnian (m.)*, from Босњѣк = Босн-јѣк.

Further, when the syllables beginning with j are immediately preceded by the consonants б, п, в, м, the letter л is inserted and coalesces with j, forming the consonant љ, e.g.

грѣбљї ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>coarser, ruder</i> , derived from груб + ји	
скѣпљї ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>more expensive, dearer</i> „ „ скуп + ји	
жївљї ( <i>adj.</i> ) = <i>livelier</i> „ „ жив + ји	
бѣзѣмље ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>madness</i> „ „ безум + је	

V. Sometimes д and т disappear before ц, ч, and џ, e.g.

Nom. sing. Ѧтац (*m.*), *father*, gen. sing. Ѧца, voc. sing. Ѧче  
 „ „ сѣдац (*m.*), *judge*, „ „ сѣца, „ „ сѣче

But in some cases they are left unchanged, as in words which end in -так, e.g.

Nom. sing. почѣтак (*m.*) = *beginning*, nom. pl. почѣтци.

VI. If the groups of consonants зд, ст, шт precede the following consonants : б, к, л, љ, м, н, њ, -д and т are omitted for the sake of euphony, whereupon assimilation takes place, e.g.

гòзба (*f.*)=*feast*, derived from гост+ба (гòст (*m.*)=*guest*).  
 мáсна (*adj. f.*, the *masc.* form is мáстан)=*greasy*, derived  
 from маст+на (мáст (*f.*)=*fat*).

### 3. Double vowels and double consonants

There are no double vowels or double consonants in Serbo-Croatian.<sup>1</sup> If two identical vowels happen to come together they are each separately pronounced, e.g.

цр̀ноок = цр̀но-ок = *black-eyed*.

по̀орати = по-òрати = *to finish ploughing*.

But if they are the result of the lapse of a consonant, they coalesce into one long vowel, e.g.

снâ (*f.*)=*daughter-in-law*, for снâа from снâха. (N.B. the forms снâја and снâха are also used.)

сâт (*m.*)=*watch, hour*, for саат, from сâхат.<sup>2</sup>

If through assimilation or for any other reason two identical consonants happen to come together one of them is omitted, e.g.

тр̀гнути = *to pull*, òтргнути = *to pull away*, from оттр̀гнути—одтр̀гнути.


сáдити = *to plant*, расáдити = *to plant about*, from рассадити—разсадити.

### 5. THE ACCENT

The accent in Serbo-Croatian is musical, and is of four different kinds: there are two long and two short accents.

I. One of the two long is *rising*, marked ' as in вíно (*n.*)=*wine*; the other is *falling*, marked ˘, as in злâто (*n.*)=*justice*.

There is no difficulty in distinguishing these; in the first the voice rises considerably before the beginning of the next syllable, e.g.

  
 BH

The only diphthongs in Serbo-Croatian are those ending in -j, e.g. мòj = *mine*, крâj (*m.*) = *end*; words such as нàука (*f.*) = *science* are regarded as of three syllables.

Cf. also such words as вò, p. 16.

In the second the voice falls considerably before the beginning of the second syllable, e.g.

злѣ́а  
 а ↘  
 а ↘  
 то

2. As for the two short accents, one of them is also *rising*, marked ` , as in село (*n.*) = *village*, жена (*f.*) = *woman* or *wife* ; the other is falling, marked ^ , as in кѹ́ха (*f.*) = *house*, по́ле (*n.*) = *field*. The difference between these may be illustrated : in the first the voice rises only slightly before the beginning of the next syllable, e.g.

се́ / ъло,      же́ / ъна

In the second the voice falls abruptly before the beginning of the next syllable, e.g.

кѹ́ ↘ / у́ха,      по́ ↘ / о́ле

The difference between these two short accents is clearer when the short falling accent occurs on a word of one syllable, e.g. то́п (*m.*) = *cannon*.

то́ ↘  
 оп

Each word can have only one of the four accents. In a word of more than one syllable the accent may come on any syllable except the last, *which is never accented*. Mono-syllabic words can only have one of the falling accents ( ^ , ^ ). The long and the short *rising* accents ( ` , ` ) are usually followed by an unaccented syllable. Different forms of the same word, e.g. different cases of the same substantive, may be differently accented, and the accent may shift from one syllable to another, e.g. брѣг (*m.*) = *hill*, dat. sing. брѣ́гу, nom. pl. брѣ́гови, dat. pl. брѣго́вима.

The only words which are not accented are the proclitics<sup>1</sup> and enclitics<sup>2</sup> ; the former preceding and the latter following the

<sup>1</sup> These are the majority of the prepositions, the negative particle не, and such conjunctions as и, а, ни, да.

<sup>2</sup> These are the shortened forms of the personal and reflexive pronouns, such as ме, те, се, ми, ти, му, ра, ѣ, and the shortened

accented word, and forming virtually part of it, though in certain phrases the accent may go to a proclitic, when the following word has a falling accent, e.g. *кòд куће*<sup>1</sup>=*at home*, *зà дāн (дāн)*=*in a day*, in the former of which the preposition *код* takes the accent of the substantive *кѹћа*, while in the latter the preposition *за* takes the accent of the substantive *дāн*, but changes it to " (cf. p. 35).

The unaccented syllables may be either short or long. The *long* unaccented syllable is marked in the present volume by the sign  $\bar{\quad}$ , e.g. *врѣме (n.)* = *time, weather*, gen. pl. *врѣмѣнā*, *лòнац (m.)* = *pot*, gen. pl. *лòнāцā*. Such long unaccented syllable (or syllables) always follow the accented syllable and *never precede it*.

The following is a list of important words which are spelt in the same way and only differentiated by accent :

грàд = <i>hail</i>	грâд = <i>town, fortress</i>
дрýга = <i>companion (f.)</i>	дрÿга = <i>second (f.)</i>
кúпити = <i>to buy</i>	кÿпити = <i>to pick up</i>
гòра = <i>wooded hill</i>	гõра = <i>worse (f.)</i>
дýга = <i>rainbow</i>	дÿга = <i>long (f.)</i>
рáнити = <i>to feed</i>	рàнити = <i>to wound</i>
сѣло = <i>village meeting</i>	сѣло = <i>village</i>
пàс = <i>dog</i>	пâс = (1) <i>waist</i> , (2) <i>girdle</i>
бáба = <i>father</i>	бâба = <i>grandmother, old woman</i>
врáта = <i>the door</i>	врâта = <i>neck (gen. sing.)</i>
кáда = <i>bath</i>	кâда or кãд = <i>when</i>
сâм = <i>alone (m.)</i>	сãм = <i>am</i>
сѣдим = <i>I grow gray</i>	сѣдѣм = <i>I sit</i>

## 6. THE DIALECTS

There are three main dialects : (1) the *ŷto*-dialect, (2) the *kaj*-dialect, and (3) the *ŷa*-dialect, which are the words for *what* in these three dialects respectively. The first, which is gradually superseding the other two, is spoken over by far the greater part of Serbian and Croatian territory, and is the most beautiful of the forms of the present of *бѣти* and *хтѣти*, and the interrogative particle *ли*.

<sup>1</sup> But this expression is also frequently accented *кòд куће*.



three dialects. It is the standard literary language of the Serbo-Croats. The *kaj*-dialect is spoken to the west of Agram and resembles Slovene. The *ča*-dialect is spoken comparatively over a very small area in N. Dalmatia and the islands. The *što*-dialect is divided into three sub-dialects which are differentiated by the threefold pronunciation of the long  $\bar{e}$  (the old Slavonic  $\text{ѣ}$ ), namely *e*, *je* (or *ije*), and *и*. These are accordingly known as the *e*-‘sub’-dialect, the *je*-‘sub’-dialect, and the *u*-‘sub’-dialect ( $u = и$ ), e.g.

*e*-subd. дѣте (*n.*) = *child*.

*je*-subd. дијете.

и *u*-subd. дѹте.

The dialect chosen for this book is the *što* (= *што*)-dialect and its *e*-sub-dialect, which in recent years, at any rate as far as Serbian literature is concerned, has been gaining ground at the expense of the *je*-dialect. The *u*-dialect is used in certain parts of Dalmatia.

The *e*-dialect is spoken and written in almost the whole of the kingdom of Serbia, and in the Serbian districts of Southern Hungary. It is the *modern literary language* of these parts. The *je*-dialect predominates in Bosnia, Hercegovina, Montenegro, Dalmatia, and is the dialect in which the greater part of Serbian literature is written, including all the national epics as edited by Vuk Stefanović Karadžić, and also his classical translation of the Holy Scriptures; it is also the modern literary language of Croatia, Bosnia, Hercegovina, and Montenegro.

But the difference between the two is really small, and one who has mastered the *e*-dialect has no difficulty in understanding the *je*-dialect.

The essential difference is this. The old Slavonic  $\bar{e}$  ( $\text{ѣ}$ ) has remained long in certain Serbo-Croatian words, while in others it has become short. Where it is still long the *e*-dialect has *e*, while the *je*-dialect has *ije*, the accent on which varies according to that on the same word in the *e*-dialect, e.g.

*e*-dialect : сѣно,      *je*-dialect : сѣјено = *hay*

рѣка,                      ријѣка = *river*

кòлѣвка,                      кòлијѣвка = *cradle*

Where it has become short the *e*-dialect has *e*, while the *je*-dialect has *je*, the accent remaining the same, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect : вѣра,	<i>je</i> -dialect : вjѣра = <i>faith, religion</i>
мѣсто,	мjѣсто = <i>place</i>
сѣдѣм,	сjѣдѣм = <i>I sit</i>

When in such cases *e* is preceded by л or н the *j* is naturally written in combination with these consonants, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect : лѣто,	<i>je</i> -dialect : љѣто = <i>summer</i>
---------------------------	---

Similarly, when *e* is preceded by т or д, these consonants appear in the *je*-dialect as **ћ** or **ђ**, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect : дѣца,	<i>je</i> -dialect : ђѣца <sup>1</sup> = <i>children</i>
тѣрати,	ћѣрати <sup>1</sup> = <i>to drive</i> (transitive)

Finally, when *e* is followed by о or j, it becomes и in the *je*-dialect, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect : дѣо,	<i>je</i> -dialect : дђо = <i>part</i>
Београд,	Биоград = <i>Belgrade</i>

<sup>1</sup> Though spellings such as дjѣца, тjѣрати, are also found.

# PART I

## CHAPTER I

### EASY PRONOUNS AND NOUNS

§ 1.	òBO = <i>this</i>	tÔ } òHO } = <i>that</i>
	òBO je = <i>this is</i>	tÔ je } òHO je } = <i>that is</i>
	òBO cy = <i>these are</i>	tÔ cy } òHO cy } = <i>those are</i>

These expressions are used, whatever the gender of the object referred to, as follows : òBO je, òBO cy refer to things near the first person, or to the speaker ; tÔ je, tÔ cy refer to things near the second person, or to the person spoken to ; òHO je, òHO cy refer to things which are at a considerable distance from both.

It is important to notice that the English phrases *these are* and *those are* are rendered in Serbian by òBO cy, tÔ cy, and òHO cy, which literally mean *this are* and *that are*.

§ 2. штà = *what*                      Kò = *who*

In accordance with what has been said above, the answer to the questions

штà je òBO ? = *what is this ?*

Kò je òBO ? = *who is this ?*

is usually

tÔ je = *that is*.

Similarly :

штà je tÔ ? = *what is that ?*

Kò je tÔ ? = *who is that ?*

are answered by :

òво је = *this is.*

Similarly :

штà је òно ? = *what is that (yonder) ?*

кò је òно ? = *who is that (yonder) ?*

are answered by :

òно је = *that is.*

### § 3. Vocabulary

òво је :

нòж (*m.*) = *knife*

та̀њир (*m.*) = *plate*

сла̀нїк (*m.*) = *salt-cellar*

са̀лвѣт (*m.*) = *napkin*

сто̀ (*m.*) } = *table*

а̀ста̀л (*m.*) }

хлѣ̀б (*m.*) } = *bread, loaf*

(х)лѣ̀бац (*m.*) }

бòкàл (*m.*) = *jug*

кòнац (*m.*) = *cotton, thread*

п̀р̀ст (*m.*) = *finger*

ча̀ј (*m.*) = *tea*

ша̀ка (*f.*) = *handful*

ру̀ка (*f.*) = *hand, arm*

но̀га (*f.*) = *leg*

со̀ба (*f.*) = *room* <sup>2</sup>

ма̀рама (*f.*) = *handkerchief*

кра̀гна (*f.*) = *collar*

ма̀шна (*f.*) = *tie*

кòшу̀ља (*f.*) = *shirt*

манж̀етна (*f.*) = *cuff*

пла̀јвãз (*m.*) = *pencil*

д̀ивит (*m.*) = *inkstand*

сàт (*m.*) = (1) *watch*, (2) *hour*

ча̀сòвник (*m.*) = *watch, clock*

чѐша̀љ (*m.*) = *comb*

ка̀п̀ут (*m.*) = *coat*

п̀р̀слук (*m.*) = *waistcoat*

кòверт (*m.*) = *envelope*

к̀у̀фер (*m.*) = *trunk*

са̀ндук (*m.*) = *wooden box* <sup>1</sup>

с̀ир (*m.*) = *cheese*

шѐкер (*m.*) = *sugar*

ц̀ипела (*f.*) = *boot, shoe*

ча̀рапа (*f.*) = *sock, stocking*

чѐтка (*f.*) = *brush*

с̀у̀к̀ња (*f.*) = *skirt*

бл̀у̀за (*f.*) = *blouse*

ха̀љина (*f.*) = *ladies' dress*

за̀веса (*f.*) = *curtain*

рукàвица (*f.*) = *glove*

ча̀ша (*f.*) = *tumbler*

<sup>1</sup> N.B. *letter-box* = са̀ндучи́ћ за писма.

<sup>2</sup> N.B. *room* = *space* = м̀есто.

ка̀шика (f.) = spoon<sup>1</sup>  
 ка̀шчица (f.) = tea-spoon  
 ма̀рка (f.) = stamp  
 ха̀ртија<sup>2</sup> (f.) = paper  
 о̀лѡвка (f.) = pencil  
 трѣ̀павица (f.) = eye-lid  
 ма̀стиѡница (f.) = inkstand  
 вѝљушка (f.) = fork

лѝце (n.) = face  
 чѐло (n.) = forehead  
 ѡ̀ко (n.) = eye  
 у̀во (or у̀хо) (n.) = ear  
 гр̀ло (n.) = throat  
 ко̀лено (n.) = knee  
 сто̀пало (n.) = foot  
 ма̀стило (n.) = ink

про̀зор (m.) = window  
 зѝд (m.) = wall  
 по̀д (m.) } = floor  
 па̀тос (m.) }  
 ѡ̀рмѡн (m.) = cupboard  
 по̀кривѡч (m.) = blanket, quilt<sup>3</sup>  
 крѐвет (m.) = bed, bedstead  
 ча̀ршав (m.) = (1) linen sheet,  
 (2) table-cloth  
 за̀стирач (m.) = (1) coloured  
 covering, (2) carpet  
 ћѝлим (m.) = carpet, rug  
 у̀мива̀бник (m.) = washstand

у̀сна or у̀сница (f.) = lip  
 ко̀са (f.) = (1) hair (collective ;  
 a hair = дла̀ка), (2) scythe  
 иг̀ла (f.) = needle  
 чѝода (f.) = pin  
 бра̀да (f.) = chin, beard  
 гла̀ва (f.) = head

пѐро (n.) = pen  
 одѐло (n.) = suit, clothes  
 ду̀гме (n.) = button  
 зла̀то (n.) = gold  
 серѐбро (n.) = silver  
 ѡ̀лово (n.) = lead  
 гво̀жђе (n.) = iron  
 пѝсемо (n.) = letter

то је :

брѝјач (m.) = razor  
 ду̀шек (m.) = mattress  
 са̀пун (m.) = soap  
 у̀брус (m.) } = towel  
 пѐшкѡр (m.) }  
 чивѡ̀лук (m.) = peg, or hook  
 шта̀п (m.) = stick  
 мѐд (m.) = honey  
 ду̀ван (m.) = tobacco  
 ја̀стук (m.) = pillow  
 зу̀б (m.) = tooth  
 но̀с (m.) = nose

<sup>1</sup> Other words for *spoon* are ѡ̀жица, жлѝца, and ла̀жица.

<sup>2</sup> *Blotting-paper* = упѝјаћа ха̀ртија (lit. which drinks up).

<sup>3</sup> Other words are ћѐбе (n.) and јѡ̀рган (m.).

фўруна (*f.*) = *oven*

пѣћ (*f.*) = *stove*

клўпа (*f.*) = *form, bench*

та́бла (*f.*) = *blackboard*

сли́ка (*f.*) = *picture*

кўти́ја (*f.*) = *box (smallish)*

ко́рпа (*f.*) = *basket*

ла́мпа (*f.*) = *lamp*

свѣ́ќа (*f.*) = *candle*

сто́лица (*f.*) = *chair*

по́стеља (*f.*) = *bedding*

на́влака (*f.*) = *pillow-case*

огле́дало (*n.*) = *looking-glass*

ста́кло (*n.*) = (1) *glass (the material), (2) a (glass) bottle,*<sup>2</sup> e.g. of water or wine

је́ло (*n.*) = *dish (se. food), anything to eat*

во́ќе (*n.*) = *fruit*

ја́је (or ја́јце) (*n.*) = *egg*

млѐ́ко (*n.*) = *milk*<sup>3</sup>

ме́со (*n.*) = *meat*

цига́ра (*f.*) = *cigar*

цига́рета (*f.*) = *cigarette*

да́ска (*f.*) = *board, plank*

ва́тра (*f.*) = *fire*

тава́нница (*f.*) = *ceiling*

се́кира (*f.*) = *axe*

во́да (*f.*) = *water*

чо́рба (*f.*) = *soup*

ка́рта (*f.*) = (1) *card, (2) railway-ticket*

со́фа (*f.*) = *sofa*<sup>1</sup>

бра́шно (*n.*) = *flour*

чекме́це (*n.*) = *a drawer*<sup>4</sup>

сла́ткō (*n.*) = *jam*

ма́сло (*n.*) = *butter (cf. p. 51)*

грожђе́ (*n.*) = *grapes (collective)*

бо́уре (*n.*) = *barrel, cask*

се́но (*n.*) = *hay*

пѣ́во (*n.*) = *beer*

ви́но (*n.*) = *wine*

дно́ је :

во́јник (*m.*) = *soldier*

офи́цѣр (*m.*) = *officer*

на́челник (*m.*) = *the head*

(e.g. of a district or institution)

бо́рд (*m.*) = (1) *ford, (2) ship*<sup>5</sup>

ча́мац (*m.*) = *canoe, rowing-boat*

ме́сец (*m.*) = (1) *moon, (2) month*

<sup>1</sup> Other words are дѣвѣн and мнидѣрлук.

<sup>2</sup> Or фла́ша.

<sup>3</sup> N.B. кѣселō (*masc. кѣсео*) млѐко is the *sour milk* much drunk in the Near East.

<sup>4</sup> Another word is фи́јока.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. па́робро́д = *steamship*.

и́звор ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>spring</i> (sc. <i>water</i> )	мѡст ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>bridge</i> <sup>1</sup>
бѹнѡр ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>well</i> (sc. <i>water</i> )	тѡрањ ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>church-tower</i>
вѡз (ог влѡк) ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>train</i>	кѡњ ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>horse</i>
хѡтел ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>hotel</i>	вѡ ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>ox</i>
ѹлица ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>street</i>	скѡла ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>ferry</i>
шкѡла ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>school</i>	звѡзда ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>star</i>
црква ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>church</i>	трава ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>grass</i>
ѡпштина ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>town-hall</i>	капија ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>gateway</i>
планина ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>mountain</i>	рѹпа ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>hole</i> (of any kind)
река ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>river</i>	ћѹприја ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>bridge</i> <sup>1</sup>
жѡлезница ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>railway</i>	сѣјалица ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>electric bulb</i>
лађа ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>steamer</i> <sup>2</sup>	тѣца (ог птѣца) ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>bird</i>
кѹла ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>tower</i>	
двѡрѣште ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>(back)-yard</i>	купѡтнѡло ( <i>n.</i> ) = (1) <i>bath-room</i> ,
сѹнце ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>sun</i>	(2) <i>bathing-place</i>
неѡбо ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>sky</i>	мѡре ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>sea</i>
пѡље ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>field</i>	тѡле ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>calf</i>
брѡдо ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>hill</i>	прѡсе ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>sucking-pig</i>
јѡзеро ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>lake</i>	кѹче ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>puppy</i>
наѡелство ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>county-hall</i>	ждрѡбе ( <i>n.</i> ) = <i>foal</i>
and <i>police-court</i>	пристанѣште ( <i>n.</i> ) = (1) <i>har-</i>
	<i>bour</i> , (2) <i>landing-stage</i>

гдѣ је = *where is?*

бѡрберин ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>barber</i>	нѡсѡч ( <i>m.</i> )	} = <i>the porter</i>
кѡчѣјѡш ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>coachman</i>	ѡмалин ( <i>m.</i> )	
гѡзда ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>the landlord</i>	прѡтлѡг ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>luggage</i>	
кѡлнер ( <i>m.</i> )	дѹћѡн ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>shop</i>	
мѡмак ( <i>m.</i> )		

<sup>1</sup> мѡст is usually *larger* than ћѹприја.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 28.

праља (f.) = <i>laundrywoman</i>	гòстница (f.) = <i>restaurant</i> <sup>1</sup>
слўшкиња (f.) } = <i>house-</i>	цàринàрница (f.) = <i>custom-</i>
сòбарица (f.) } <i>maid</i>	<i>house</i> <sup>2</sup>
пòшта (f.) = <i>the post-office</i>	стàница (f.) = <i>station</i>
канцелàрија (f.) = <i>office,</i>	
<i>bureau</i>	

òво су (Plural Nouns) : гдè су = *where are?*

нòсцла (n.) = <i>stretcher</i>	дèсни (f.) = <i>gums</i>
ýста (n.) = <i>mouth</i>	чàкшире (f.) } = <i>trousers</i>
лèђа (n.) = <i>back</i>	панталóне (f.) }
врàта (n.) = <i>door</i>	кљèште (f.) = <i>pincers</i>
кòла (n.) = <i>carriage</i>	мàшнице (f.) = <i>tongs</i>
гàђе (f.) = <i>drawers, pants</i>	саòнице (f.) = <i>sledge</i>
грўди (f.) } = <i>breast, chest</i>	вйле (f.) = <i>pitchfork</i>
п̀рси (f.) }	лèстнице (f.) } = <i>ladder</i>
мàказе (f.) = <i>scissors</i>	стўбе (f.) }
гўсле (f.) = <i>Serbian one-</i>	мèрдевине (f.) }
<i>stringed violin</i>	нàочàри (f.) = <i>spectacles</i>
стèпенице (f.) = <i>stairs</i>	љўди (m.) = <i>men, people</i>
нòвине (f.) = <i>newspaper</i> <sup>3</sup>	терàзнице = <i>weighing-scales</i>

### Reading Exercise

1. Óво је стò, тò је сàт, а òно је чàша. 2. Óвде је нòж, тў је тањйр, а òнде је хлèб. 3. Óвде су кàпўт и п̀рслук, тў су мàрама и крàгна, а òнде су кòшуља и манжèтне. 4. Гдè је нòж?—Óвде (је). 5. Гдè је тањйр?—Тў (је). 6. Гдè је хлèб?—Óнде (је). 7. Гдè су кàпўт и п̀рслук?—Óвде (су). 8. Гдè су кòшуља и манжèтне?—Óнде (су). 9. Чèтка за кòсу. 10. Чèтка за одèло. 11. Чèтка за зўбе. 12. Чèтка за ципеле. 13. Чèтка за шèшйр.

<sup>1</sup> Or *restorān*, cf. also p. 52.

<sup>2</sup> *цàрина* = *toll or custom or duty*.

<sup>3</sup> *One number of a newspaper* = *јèдан брòј нòвинà* or *јèдне нòвине*; N.B. *news* = *нòвина*.



14. Хâртија и кòверт. 15. Мâрка за пîсмо. 16. Пòштанске мâрке. 17. Мâстило је у мâстиòници. 18. Хâртија је у кòверту. 19. Чâршав зâ стò. 20. Чâршав за крèвет. 21. Застìрāч зâ стò (ог за крèвет, ог зâ пòд (пàтос)). 22. Ђìлим је на пòду. 23. Пèшкìр је на ùмиваòнику. 24. Слìка је на зìду. 25. Лāмпa и свèћа су на стòлу. 26. Вòда је у бокāлу. 27. Бòкāл за вòду. 28. Бÿре за вìно. 29. Јāгње је ù дворìшту. 30. Кòњ и тèле су ù пољу.

## Notes

2. Óвде=*here*, тÿ=*there*, óнде=*there (yonder)*. 3. и=*and*, а=*and or but*. 4. гдè=*where*. 9. за=*for*. 16. =*postage stamps*. 17. у=*in*. 22. на=*on*.

## CHAPTER 2

THE PRESENT TENSE OF *TO BE*

THE verbs бìти = *to be*, and хтèти = *to wish, to want, to be willing*, in Serbian have two functions. In the first place they are used in their literal meaning, and in the second as auxiliary verbs: (1) бìти corresponding to the English verb *to have*, (2) хтèти corresponding to the English *shall and will*.

The personal pronouns are :

јā = <i>I</i>	мì = <i>we</i>	
тì = <i>thou</i>	вì = <i>you</i>	
òн = <i>he</i>	òни ( <i>m.</i> )	} = <i>they</i>
òна = <i>she</i>	òне ( <i>f.</i> )	
òно = <i>it</i>	òна ( <i>n.</i> )	

The second person тì is always used in Serbian amongst relatives and intimate friends of the same age, and by all country people under all circumstances, but its use is not to be recommended to foreigners.

## БЫТИ

This verb has in the present a *full* and a *short* form :

**Present tense**

(a) Full form :

- |                                |                                |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 1. (я) жєсам = <i>I am</i>     | (мѣ) жєсмо = <i>we are</i>     |
| 2. (тѣ) жєси = <i>thou art</i> | (вѣ) жєсте = <i>you are</i>    |
| 3. (ѡн) жєст = <i>he is</i>    | (ѡни) жєсу } = <i>they are</i> |
| (ѡна) жєст = <i>she is</i>     | (ѡне) жєсу } = <i>they are</i> |
| (ѡно) жєст = <i>it is</i>      | (ѡна) жєсу } = <i>they are</i> |

(b) Short form :

In practice the commonest form of the verb is a shortened one, consisting of the personal pronoun and the second half of the verb form, *except* in the 3rd person sing., where the last two letters of the verb form are omitted :

- |                            |                                 |
|----------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. я сам = <i>I am</i>     | мѣ смо = <i>we are</i>          |
| 2. тѣ си = <i>thou art</i> | вѣ сте = <i>you are</i>         |
| 3. ѡн је = <i>he is</i>    | ѡни су (m.) } = <i>they are</i> |
| ѡна је = <i>she is</i>     | ѡне су (f.) } = <i>they are</i> |
| ѡно је = <i>it is</i>      | ѡна су (n.) } = <i>they are</i> |

**The use of the Personal Pronouns**

Generally the personal pronouns are omitted with all verbs unless emphasis is laid on them, but they are always retained with these shortened forms of the present tense of БЫТИ.

**Questions**

The *interrogative* is formed by putting the interrogative particle ЛИ immediately after the full verb forms, but in the 3rd person sing. after the short form : жє ли ? If the pronoun is not omitted its place is after the interrogative particle :

јѐсам ли (јâ) ? = *am I ?*

јѐ ли (ѝн, ѝна, ѝно) ? = *is he, she, it ?*

јѐсте ли (вѝ) ? = *are you ?*

јѐсу ли (ѝни, ѝне, ѝна) ? = *are they ?*

A more emphatic form of the interrogative is that introduced by the conjunction зâр, which has no exact English equivalent ; it expresses surprise or incredulity :

зâр сам јâ ? ! = *am I really ? !*

зâр је ѝн, ѝна, ѝно ? ! = *is he, she, it ? !*

зâр смо мѝ ? ! = *are we ? !*

зâр су ѝни, ѝне, ѝна ? ! = *are they ? !*

Questions can also be asked by means of the conjunction дâ followed by the interrogative particle ли ; both are then put before the short verb form, and the personal pronoun, if it is used, is placed after the verb, e.g.

дâ ли сам (јâ) ? = *am I ?*

дâ ли је (ѝн, ѝна, ѝно) ? = *is he, she, it ?*

дâ ли сте (вѝ) ? = *are you ?*

дâ ли су (ѝни, ѝне, ѝна) ? = *are they ?*

This expression corresponds to the French idiom : *est-ce que . . . ?*

In practice, however, questions are very frequently asked without using any of these particles, and then the verb is used in its affirmative form, i.e. pronoun first and verb second, emphasis being laid on the verb, and the voice being raised to indicate that it is a question ; the question is asked in the form of an assumption, e.g.

вѝ сте Срѝбин ? = *you are a Serbian ?*

The other forms are :

јѐсте ли вѝ Срѝбин ? } = *are you a Serbian ?*  
 дâ ли сте вѝ Срѝбин ? }

зâр сте вѝ Срѝбин ? ! = *are you really a Serbian ?*

It is to be noticed that, when the sentence begins with an interrogative pronoun or adverb such as *кѡлико* = *how much*, *how many*, *кѡд* = *when*, *гдѣ* = *where*, *кѡ* = *who*, *штѡ* = *what*, no interrogative particle is necessary, e.g.

*кѡ* стѣ вѣ ? = *who are you ?*    *штѡ* стѣ вѣ ? = *what are you ?*

### Negations

The *negative* is formed by prefixing the short forms with the negative particle *ни* (originally *не* *je*), e.g.

- |                                    |                                 |                         |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. (jâ) нѣсам = <i>I am not</i>    | (мѣ) нѣсмо = <i>we are not</i>  |                         |
| 2. (тѣ) нѣси = <i>thou art not</i> | (вѣ) нѣсте = <i>you are not</i> |                         |
| 3. (ѡн) нѣје = <i>he is not</i>    | (ѡни) нѣсу                      | } = <i>they are not</i> |
| (ѡна) нѣје = <i>she is not</i>     | (ѡне) нѣсу                      |                         |
| (ѡно) нѣје = <i>it is not</i>      | (ѡна) нѣсу                      |                         |

Sometimes the negative is combined with an interrogation, in which case the verb is placed first, the interrogative particle *ли* second, and the pronoun, if required, last, e.g. *нѣсам ли (jâ) ?* = *am I not ? !*    *нѣсте ли вѣ ? !* = *are you not ? !*

If such questions are asked in a tone of surprise or incredulity they can be preceded by *зѡр*, cf. p. 33, e.g.

*зѡр нѣсте вѣ Енглѣз ? !* = *are you not an Englishman !*

*нѣсам, jâ сам Америкѡнац* = *no, I am not ; I am an American.*

*Note.* There is another form of the present tense of this verb which is *only* used in subordinate clauses, and comes to have the meaning of a future ; it is known as the *perfective present* (or exact future), and its use implies the completion of an action in the future (cf. pp. 170, 185) :

- |                                    |                              |                     |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------|
| 1. (jâ) бѣдѣм = <i>I am (I be)</i> | (мѣ) бѣдѣмо = <i>we are</i>  |                     |
| 2. (тѣ) бѣдѣш = <i>thou art</i>    | (вѣ) бѣдѣте = <i>you are</i> |                     |
| 3. (ѡн) бѣдѣ = <i>he is</i>        | (ѡни) бѣдѣ                   | } = <i>they are</i> |
| (ѡна) бѣдѣ = <i>she is</i>         | (ѡне) бѣдѣ                   |                     |
| (ѡно) бѣдѣ = <i>it is</i>          | (ѡна) бѣдѣ                   |                     |

The use of this tense is illustrated on p. 170.

## Reading Exercise

1. Уста су на лицу. 2. Прозор и врата су у зиду.  
 3. Чај и шећер. 4. Чај са шећером. 5. Чај без шећера.  
 6. Ватра горї. 7. Ватра не горї. 8. Ја сам офіцир.  
 9. Ти си војник. 10. Он је начелник.  
 11. Где је начелство? 12. Слика је на прозору. 13. Скѣла је на реци.  
 14. Звѣзде су на небу.<sup>1</sup> 15. Тице су на трави.  
 16. Јагње и прасе су на извору. 17. Цицелe су под крѣветом.  
 18. Во је на брду.<sup>1</sup> 19. Лађа је на језеру.  
 20. Општина је близу цркве и шкѣле. 21. Куће је на улици.<sup>1</sup>  
 22. Ми смо официри. 23. Ви сте војници.  
 24. Они су начелници. 25. Коњ и во су на куприји.  
 26. Где су кола? — Ђно от ђто их<sup>2</sup> су (от су).  
 27. Где су маказе?—Ђво их<sup>2</sup> су (от су). 28. Где су уста?  
 —На лицу. 29. Где је нос?—На лицу. 30. Машице су код ватре.<sup>1</sup>  
 31. Брод је на мору.<sup>1</sup> 32. Брод је у пристаништу.  
 33. Где је брод?—На мору (от у пристаништу).  
 34. Кутија је у корпи. 35. Цигарете су на столу.  
 36. Где су цигарете?—На столу.

## Notes

4. са=*with*. 5. бѣз=*without*. 6. горї=*burns*. 7. не горї=*does not burn*.  
 17. под=*under*. 20. близу=*near*. 26. ђто=*there is, there are*; ђно=*there is, there are (yonder)*,  
 the French *voilà*. 27. ђво=*here is, here are*, the French *voici*.  
 30. код=*near (or at the house of)*=the French *chez*.

<sup>1</sup> Besides на небу, на брду, на улици, код ватре, на мору, accentuations such as на нѣбу, на брду, на љици, код ватре, на мору are very frequent (cf. p. 22).

<sup>2</sup> их, gen. pl. of ђне and ђна (cf. p. 54). After the interjections ђво, ђто, ђно, which are used in the same way as ђво, тѡ, ђно (cf. p. 25), the *genitive* is used. But phrases such as ђво су кола=*here is the carriage*, ђто (ђно) су маказе=*there are the scissors*, are contracted from ђво, ѡвде су кола and ђто (ђно), ѡнде су маказе.

## CHAPTER 3

## SUBSTANTIVES

(and the use of the cases without prepositions)

THERE is no article in the Serbian language, either definite or indefinite, e.g.

цвѣт (*m.*) = (1) *a flower*, or (2) *the flower*.

сѡба (*f.*) = (1) *a room*, or (2) *the room*.

дѣте (*n.*) = (1) *a child*, or (2) *the child*.

There are three genders : masculine, feminine, and neuter ; and seven cases : (1) nominative, (2) genitive, (3) dative, (4) accusative, (5) vocative, (6) instrumental, (7) locative (or prepositional<sup>1</sup>).

Besides the singular and the plural there is also a dual number, which is preserved nowadays in a few words (cf. pp. 40, 47, 49, 50).

In Serbian not only all substantives, but also all pronouns and adjectives, and certain numerals, are declined.

Nouns and adjectives, the nominative of which ends in a consonant, are usually masculine, those ending in o or e are almost all neuter, while those ending in a are mostly feminine.

There are three different declensions of substantives.

To the *first* belong all the masculine nouns, *except* those ending in the nom. sing. in -a. In the nom. sing. they end either in a consonant or in -o, or -e ; in the gen. sing. they end in -a, e.g. прѡзор = *window*, сѡн = *son*, кѡњ = *horse*, нѡж = *knife*, Мѡрко = *Mark*, Пѡвле = *Paul*, вѡ<sup>2</sup> = *ox*, сѡко<sup>2</sup> = *falcon*, пѡсаѡ<sup>2</sup> = *business, job*, cf. pp. 44 ff.

<sup>1</sup> So called because never used except with a preposition.

<sup>2</sup> These originally ended in -л, cf. p. 16.

To the *second* belong all feminine nouns, and those masculine nouns ending in -a in the nom. sing. just mentioned. The great majority of feminine nouns end in -a in the nom. sing.; a certain number end in a consonant, very few end in -o, such as мѣцао<sup>1</sup> = *idea, thought*, сѡ<sup>1</sup> = *salt*, and two irregular feminine nouns end in -и, viz. мѣти = *mother*, and кѣти = *daughter*.

Those ending in -a, feminine as well as masculine, have in the gen. sing. -e; those ending in a consonant have in the gen. sing. -и (cf. pp. 46-48).

The word дѡба = *time*, though ending in -a, is neuter, but is not declined (cf. p. 161).

Examples: жѣна (f.) = (1) *woman*, (2) *wife*, дѣша (f.) = *soul*, ствѣр (f.) = *thing*, слѣга (m.) = *man-servant*, cf. pp. 46 ff.

To the *third* belong all the neuter nouns; these end in the nom. sing. in -o or -e, and in the gen. sing. in -a. Some of them insert in the gen. sing. the syllable -ен or -ет before -a.

Examples: сѣло = *village*, пѡље = *field*, плѣме = *tribe*, дѣгме = *button*, cf. pp. 49 ff.

1. In the singular, the dative and the locative of all substantives are the same, while in the plural the dative, instrumental, and locative are all the same, but in both numbers feminine endings are different from those of the masculine and neuter.

2. The acc. sing. of all masculine nouns which refer to an *animate* or a once animate being is the same as the gen. sing. The acc. sing. of all masculine nouns which refer to *inanimate* things is the same as the nom. sing.

3. Both in the singular and in the plural of all neuter nouns the nominative, accusative, and vocative are the same.

<sup>1</sup> These originally ended in -и, cf. p. 16.

4. The nominative, accusative, and vocative plural of all feminine nouns are the same.

5. The nominative and vocative plural of all masculine nouns are the same.

The following are a few of the commonest substantival suffixes :

### 1. Masculine

- ај, nouns derived from verbs, e.g. по̀ложāј = *position*, from по̀ложити = *to place*.
- ар, to denote agents, e.g. сто̀лар = *carpenter*, from сто̀ = *table*.
- ин, to denote origin, religion, profession, e.g. Јевреин = *Jew*, Бу̀гарин = *a Bulgar (m.)*, cf. p. 46.
- ник, denoting agents, e.g. у̀метни́к = *artist*, from у̀мети.
- тељ, to denote agents, e.g. при́јатељ = *friend*.
- и́ћ, the masculine diminutive, e.g. мо̀мчи́ћ = *a little boy*; this is particularly common in surnames, implying 'son', e.g. По̀пови́ћ, the common surname Ро̀кови́ц: по̀п = *priest*<sup>1</sup>, по̀пов = *belonging (masc.) to the priest* (cf. p. 63).
- ак, or -јак, e.g. у̀стана́к = *rebellion*, from у̀стати = *to rise*, мо̀ма́к = *a young man*, Бо̀шња́к = *a Bosnian (masc.)*.
- ац, e.g. тр̀гова́ц = *merchant*, Хе́рцегова́ц = *a man from Hercegovina*, Далма́ти́нац = *a Dalmatian (m.)*, Црно́гóraц = *a Montenegrin (m.)*.
- џија (Turkish), to denote profession, e.g. кавџи́ја = *innkeeper*, also меха̀нџија.
- лу́к (Turkish), to denote locality or use, e.g. ми́ндѐрлу́к = *sofa*, пр̀слу́к = *waistcoat* ('breast-piece').

<sup>1</sup> N.B. a more reverent term is свѣштени́к.



## 2. Feminine

- иња, denoting origin, religion, profession, &c., e.g. Грџиња = *a Greek woman*, from Грџк = *a Greek*.<sup>1</sup>
- ица, denoting agents, e.g. пријатèлица = *friend*; also places, e.g. чèкабница = *waiting-room*, чїтабница = *reading-room*.
- ка, denoting female beings, e.g. дèвòјка = *girl*, cf. дèвòјчица = *a little girl*.
- ад, feminine collectives, e.g. мòмчàд = *the young boys*.
- ост, for abstract nouns, e.g. рàдòст = *joy*, ùметност = *art*.
- ина, for derivative nouns of various kinds, e.g. òтацòбина = *fatherland*, тèлèтина = *veal*, планїна = *mountain*.
- ска, for names of countries, e.g. Бýгарска = *Bulgaria*, Тýрска = *Turkey*, Ўгарска = *Hungary* (also Маџарска), Швàјцарска = *Switzerland*.
- ија, for names of countries, e.g. Àлбàнија (or Àрбàнија) = *Albania*,<sup>2</sup> Рýмýнија = *Rumania*,<sup>3</sup> Аýстрија = *Austria*.

## 3. Neuter

- је, for collective nouns, e.g. лїшкè = *leaves*, from лїст = *a leaf*, кàмèње = *stones*, from кàмен = *a stone*.
- ство, for abstract nouns, e.g. бòгàство = *wealth*.
- ње, for verbal nouns, e.g. уједињèње = *unification*, вèжбàње = *practice*, имàње = *property*.

## The use of the cases without Prepositions

(For their use *with* prepositions, cf. pp. 153 ff.)

The *nominative* is used as in other languages, but for foreigners it is very important to remember that the *vocative* must always be used in addressing anybody, e.g. Дòбар дàн,

<sup>1</sup> Greece = Грџка.

<sup>2</sup> An Albanian = Арнаутин.

<sup>3</sup> A Rumanian = Рýмýн.

госпòдине Пòповићу! = *good morning, Mr. Popović!*, дòбро вèче, гòспођо (or гòспођице) = *good evening, Madame (or Mademoiselle)*. N.B. in addressing ladies the surname is most frequently omitted; otherwise Mrs. Popović is: гòспођа Пòповић or Пòповићка; Miss Popović: гòспођица Пòповић or Пòповићева, of which the shorter forms are preferred, and also are usually not declined.

The *genitive* is used as follows :

1. To denote possession, when the name of the owner is qualified in any way, e.g. тò је књига мòга брàта = *that is the book of my brother*; otherwise possessive adjectives very often take its place, e.g. тò је брàтовљева књига = *that is the (sc. my) brother's book*.

2. After expressions denoting a quantity of anything, e.g. кòмàд мèса = *a piece of meat*, пàрче шèћера (or хлèба) = *a piece of sugar (or bread)*, фўнта мàсла = *a pound of butter*, пòла фўнте чаја =  $\frac{1}{2}$  lb. of tea, мнòго лўдї = *many people*, мàло нòвца = *little money*, хòћете ли сїра? = *do you want any cheese?* имà ли вòћа? = *is there any fruit?*

3. In negative sentences, especially after the verb нèмати (cf. p. 111), e.g. нèмàм срèће = *I have no luck*, нèма вїна = *there is no wine*, нèма нїкога = *there is no one*, but N.B. нèма нїшта = *there is nothing*.

4. To denote the quality of anything, e.g. хòтел пр̀вога р̀едà = *a hotel of the first class*, кàрта др̀уге клàсе = *ticket of the second class*, чòвек нїског р̀àста = *a man of low stature*, бр̀зих нòгу (gen. of dual) = *of fast legs*, вр̀дних р̀укў (gen. of dual) = *having strong hands (sc. industrious)*.

5. In expressions of time, e.g. òве нòћи = *this night (either last or next)*, свàкога дàна = *every day*, пр̀шле (ìдўће) гòдине (нèдеље) = *last (next) year (week)*, пр̀шлог (ìдўћег)

месеца = *last (next) month*; for expressions of the *date* and the *time of day*, cf. p. 98 f.

The *dative* is used :

1. To show direction, e.g. идѐмо кѹћи = *we are going home*.
2. In such expressions as : дајте му ђву књѳгу = *give him this book*, пишите ми чѐсто = *write to me often*, прѹжите ми сѳ = *pass me the salt*, рѐците им = *tell them*.
3. Possession, e.g. ѳтац му је бѳлестан = *his father is ill*, кѳликѳ вам је гѳдѳнѳ ? = *how old are you ?*
4. In impersonal expressions, cf. pp. 115 ff.

The *accusative* is used as follows :

1. After transitive verbs as in other languages, e.g. читѳм књѳгу = *I am reading a book*.
2. In expressions of space, time, &c., e.g. ѳтаѳу ѳвде нѐдељу (мѐсѐц, гѳдину, all these frequently followed by данѳ, lit. *of days*) = *I shall stay here a week (a month, a year)*, ѳва планина је висѳка хиљаду и двѐ стѳтине мѐтарѳ = *this mountain is 1,200 metres high*, свѳки (цѐѳ) дан = *every (the whole) day*, свѳку (цѐлу) нѳћ = *every (the whole) night*.
3. In impersonal expressions, e.g. стѳд ме је = *I am ashamed*, also срамѳта ме је (cf. chap. 20), lit. *shame me is*.

The *instrumental* is used as follows :

1. To denote the instrument or the means by which anything is done, e.g. нѐ могу да сѐчѐм ѳвим тѹним нѳжем = *I cannot cut with this blunt knife*, путѳваѳемо лѳђѳм до Бѐѳграда па ѳдѳнде вѳзом (ѳг жѐлезницѳм илѳи кѳлима) до Крађујѐвца = *we shall travel by steamer to Belgrade and thence by rail or by carriage to Kragujevac*.
2. To denote direction, e.g. јѳшем пѳљем = *I am riding through the field*, идѐмо ѳлицѳм = *we are going along the street*.

3. To denote manner, e.g. јашем кâсом = *I am riding at a trot*, он ђде трком = *he went off (aorist from отићи, cf. p.188) at a run*, они гѡворе шâпâтом = *they are speaking in a whisper*, ѡдите рѡдом = *go in turn, one after the other*.

4. In certain expressions of time, e.g. недељом (N.V. inst. sing.) = *on Sundays*, ноћу = *by night*, on the analogy of which has also been formed дању = *by day*.

5. To denote comparison (mostly in poetry, instead of као + nom.), e.g. вѡлѡм ѡмрѡти нѡго рѡбѡм жѡвети = *I prefer to die than to live as a slave*.

The *locative* is used only after prepositions, cf. pp. 157, 159.

### Reading Exercise

Кâко се кâже на српском <sup>1</sup> hand ?	} What is the	
Кâко се зѡве на српском hand ?		} Serbian
Кâко се српски <sup>2</sup> кâже (ог зѡве) hand ?		

Мѡлѡм вас, *please* (lit. *I beg you*) ; дâјте ми, *give me* ; прѡђите ми, *pass me* ; донѡсите ми, *bring me* ; кѡпите ми, *buy me* ; хвâла вам ог фâла вам, *thank you* ; хвâла, *thanks*<sup>3</sup> ; хвâла (ог фâла) лѡпо, *thank you (nicely)* ; вѡлика вам хвâла ог вѡлико вам хвâла, *thank you very much* ; мнѡго вам хвâла, *many thanks*.

Знâте ли? *do you know?* знâм, *I do (know)* ; нѡ знâм, *I don't know* ; кâжите ми, *tell me* ; извѡните ме ог опрѡстите ми, *excuse me, I beg your pardon*.

Кâко сте? *How do you do?* Врѡ дѡбро, хвâла, *Thanks, very well*. Кâко сте ви? *How are you?* Нѡсам дѡбро ог нѡје ми дѡбро, *I am not well*. Не ѡсекâм се дѡбро, *I don't feel well*. Штâ вам је? *What is the matter with you?* Бѡлѡ ме глâва, *I have a headache*. Бѡлѡ ме зѡб, *I have*

<sup>1</sup> Sc. jѡziku (*language*), 'on Serbian'.

<sup>2</sup> Is an adverb, 'Serbian fashion'.

<sup>3</sup> Lit. *praise*.

*toothache*. Бòлїи ме нòга, *My leg hurts (me)*. Бòлїи ме стòмāк, *My stomach aches* (cf. p. 41).

Дòбар дāн ! *good day!* дòбро јўтро ! *good morning!* дòбро вèче ! *good evening!* лāку нòћ<sup>1</sup> ! ог дòбру нòћ ! *good night!* зòгом,<sup>2</sup> *good-bye*, дò виђèнā, *till we meet again*. Кўдā ћете ог кўдā идéте ? *Where are you going?* Дòђите к мèни, *Come to me*. Òдите òвāмо ог дòђите òвāмо, *Come here*. Мòлїи вас, чèкājте мāло, *Please wait a little*. Хājде ог āјде, *Come along (thou)*, хājдете, *come along here (you)*, хājдемо, *let us go*.

1. Мòлїи вас, донèсите ми вòде (вїна, шèћера, хлèба, &c.). 2. Мòлїи вас, гдè је нāчелство (ог полїиција ог хòтел А)? 3. Донèсите ми, мòлїи вас, слāнїк и сàлвèт. 4. Мòлїи, прўжите ми хлèб. 5. Гдè су кòла, мòлїи ? Пред хòтелом. 6. Мòлїи вас знāте ли гдè сèди<sup>3</sup> (ог стāнује<sup>4</sup>), дòктор В ? Опрòстите, нè знāм. 7. Кājите ми, мòлїи вас, кāко се зòве òво јèло ? 8. Знāте ли кāко се зòве òно сèло (ог òва вāрош) ?

### Important notes

In Serbian two and even three negative words are often necessary in a negative phrase, where in English only one is required, e.g.

òн нè чује = *he does not hear*.

òн нїкад нè чује = *he never hears*.

òн нїкад нїшта нè чује = *he never hears anything*.

нè = *not*.

нїкад (*adv.*) = *never*.

нїшта (*pron.*) = *nothing*.

<sup>1</sup> *Acc., sc. жèлїи вам = I wish you.*

<sup>2</sup> *From с Бòгом = with God.*

<sup>3</sup> *Lit. sits, sc. lives, from сèдети.*

<sup>4</sup> *Lives, resides, from станòвати.*

## CHAPTER 4

## DECLENSION OF SUBSTANTIVES

## I. Declension

(MASCULINE NOUNS, EXCEPT THOSE IN -A)

STEMS in ж, ѓ, ј, љ, њ, к, ч, ц, ш are called *soft*, the rest *hard*. The stem is found by cutting off the final vowel of the gen. sing.

A. Examples of soft stems : кѡњ = *horse*, нѡж = *knife*.

Sing. Nom.	кѡњ	нѡж
Gen.	кѡња	нѡжа
Dat.	кѡњу	нѡжу
Acc.	кѡња	нѡж
Voc.	кѡњу	нѡжу
Inst.	кѡњем	нѡжем
Loc.	кѡњу	нѡжу
Pl. Nom.	кѡњи	нѡжеви
Gen.	кѡња̄	нѡжѣвѣ̄
Dat.	кѡњима	нѡжевима
Acc.	кѡње	нѡжеве
Voc.	кѡњи	нѡжеви
Inst.	кѡњима	нѡжевима
Loc.	кѡњима	нѡжевима

B. Examples of hard stems : прѡзор = *window*, сѡн = *son*

Sing. Nom.	прѡзор	сѡн
Gen.	прѡзора	сѡна
Dat.	прѡзору	сѡну
Acc.	прѡзор	сѡна
Voc.	прѡзоре	сѡне
Inst.	прѡзором	сѡном
Loc.	прѡзору	сѡну

Pl. Nom.	прѳзори	сѳнови
Gen.	прѳѳрѳ	синѳвѳ
Dat.	прѳзорима	синѳвима
Acc.	прѳзоре	сѳнове
Voc.	прѳзори	сѳнови
Inst.	прѳзорима	синѳвима
Loc.	прѳзорима	синѳвима

The insertion of the syllable -ов- or -ев- in the plural of the masculine nouns occurs most frequently in nouns of one syllable,<sup>1</sup> but no absolute rule can be given ; sometimes its use is optional, e.g. вѳци (cf. p. 18) or вѳкови = *the wolves*, but N.V. only вѳкѳвѳ = gen. pl.

The differences in the declension of nouns with soft and of those with hard stems are : (1) in the singular, those with soft stems have in the vocative -у instead of -е, and in the instrumental -ем instead of -ом ; (2) in the plural, the monosyllabic nouns with soft stems have in the nominative -ев instead of -ов.

Masculine nouns ending in the nom. sing. in -о and -е have the same inflections, e.g. сѳко (stem : сокол-, cf. p. 16) = *falcon*, Пѳвле = *Paul*, Мѳрко = *Mark*.

Sing. Nom.	сѳко	Pl. сѳколи	or сѳколови
Gen.	сѳкола	сѳкѳлѳ	or соколѳвѳ
Dat.	сѳколу	сѳколима	or соколѳвима
Acc.	сѳкола	сѳколе	or сѳколове
Voc.	сѳколе	сѳколи	or сѳколови
Inst.	сѳколом	сѳколима	or соколѳвима
Loc.	сѳколу	сѳколима	or соколѳвима

<sup>1</sup> This inserted syllable is a relic of an old declension which is now lost, and is an intruder in most of the words in which it now occurs.

Nom.	Пáвле	Мáрко
Gen.	Пáвла	Мáрка
Dat.	Пáвлу	Мáрку
Acc.	Пáвла	Мáрка
Voc.	Пáвле	Мáрко
Inst.	Пáвлом	Мáрком
Loc.	Пáвлу	Мáрку

Nouns denoting nationality, citizenship, religion, or profession, ending in the nom. sing. in -ин, lose н in the plural and are then declined like прѳзори, e.g.

Nom. Sing.	Срѳин = <i>a Serbian (m.)</i>	Nom. Pl.	Срѳи.
„ „	Бѳграђанин = <i>a native of Belgrade (m.)</i>	„ „	Бѳграђани
„ „	бѳрберин = <i>barber</i>	„ „	бѳрбери.
„ „	хрѳшћанин = <i>Christian</i>	„ „	хрѳшћани

Nouns in -ац lose the а after the nom. sing., e.g. Нѳмац = *a German (m.)*, nom. pl. Нѳмци, cf. p. 16.

## II. Declension

(FEMININE, AND MASCULINE NOUNS IN -а)

In this declension the same distinction is made between *soft* and *hard* stems as in the first, but there are no differences in declension.

A. Example of a soft stem : дýша = *soul*.

Sing. Nom.	дýша	дýше
Gen.	дýше	дýшā
Dat.	дýши	дýшама
Acc.	дýшу	дýше
Voc.	дýшо	дýше
Inst.	дýшом	дýшама
Loc.	дýши	дýшама



B. Example of a hard stem : жèна = *woman*.

Sing. Nom.	жèна	жèне
Gen.	жèне	жèнā
Dat.	жèни	жèнама
Acc.	жèну	жèне
Voc.	жèно	жèне
Inst.	жèнѡм	жèнама
Loc.	жèни	жèнама

Feminine nouns in -ица, such as гѡспођица = *young lady*, *Miss*, домāќица = *hostess*, *matron* (masc. домāќин), have in the voc. sing. е, e.g. гѡспођице, домāќице.

What has been said on p. 16 explains such forms as, e.g. nom. sing. дèвојка = *girl* (stem девојк-), gen. pl. дèвојкā ; nom. sing. ѡвца = *a sheep* (stem овц-), gen. pl. ѡвāцā.

Sometimes the ending а in the gen. pl. is replaced by и, on the analogy of the declension of ствāр (cf. p. 48), e.g. nom. sing. бѡрба = *fighting* (stem борб-), gen. pl. бѡрбѡи ; nom. sing. мѡлба = *petition* (stem молб-), gen. pl. мѡлбѡи.

The nouns нѡга and рѹка have *gen. dual*: нѡгѹ and рѹкѹ, cf. p. 40.

Masculine nouns in -а are declined like жèна and дѹша.

In the dative and locative sing. of this declension the gutturals к, г, х, do not always change to ц, з, с, before и, cf. p. 18. When they occur in the groups тк, чк, and зг, and also in proper names, they remain unchanged, e.g.

Nom. Sing.	тѣтка = <i>aunt</i>	Dat.	тѣтки (not тетци)
,, ,,	мāзга = <i>mule</i>	,, ,,	мāзги (not маззи)
,, ,,	мāчка = <i>cat</i>	,, ,,	мāчки (not мачци)
,, ,,	Лѹка = <i>Luke</i>	,, ,,	Лѹки (not Луци)
,, ,,	сѣка = <i>sister</i> (dim.)	,, ,,	сѣки (not сеци)

Masculine nouns in -a, e.g. слуга = *man-servant*, though declined throughout like feminine nouns, are looked upon in the sing. as masculine, but in the pl. as feminine, e.g. òvāj слуга је дòбар = *this man-servant is good*, but òвè слуге су дòбре = *these men-servants are good*.

Feminine nouns which end in the nom. sing. in a *consonant* have the following inflections, e.g. ствâп = *thing* :

Sing. Nom.	ствâп	ствâри
Gen.	ствâри	ствâрӣ
Dat.	ствâри	ствâрима
Acc.	ствâп	ствâри
Voc.	ствâри	ствâри
Inst.	ствâри (or ствâрjу)	ствâрима
Loc.	ствâри	ствâрима

The two irregular nouns, мãти (stem : матер-) = *mother*, and кћñ (stem : кћер-) = *daughter*, are declined as follows :

Sing. Nom.	мãти	мãтере
Gen.	мãтере	мãтерã
Dat.	мãтери	мãтерама
Acc.	мãтер	мãтере
Voc.	мãти	мãтере
Inst.	мãтером	мãтерама
Loc.	мãтери	мãтерама
Sing. Nom.	кћñ	кћëри
Gen.	кћëри	кћëрӣ
Dat.	кћëри	кћëрима
Acc.	кћëр	кћëри
Voc.	кћëри	кћëри
Inst.	кћëри (or -jу)	кћëрима
Loc.	кћëри	кћëрима

## III. Declension

## (NEUTER NOUNS)

In this declension also the same distinction is made between *soft* and *hard* stems as in the other two, and the differences in the declension of the two kinds of stems are the same as in the case of the masculine nouns (cf. p. 45).

A. Example of a soft stem : пѡ́ле = *field*.

Sing. Nom.	пѡ́ле	Pl.	пѡ́ља
Gen.	пѡ́ља		пѡ́льѧ
Dat.	пѡ́љу		пѡ́льима
Acc.	пѡ́ле		пѡ́ља
Voc.	пѡ́ле		пѡ́ља
Inst.	пѡ́лем		пѡ́льима
Loc.	пѡ́љу		пѡ́льима

B. Example of a hard stem : сѣ́ло = *village*.

Sing. Nom.	сѣ́ло	Pl.	сѣ́ла
Gen.	сѣ́ла		сѣ́лѧ
Dat.	сѣ́лу		сѣ́лима
Acc.	сѣ́ло		сѣ́ла
Voc.	сѣ́ло		сѣ́ла
Inst.	сѣ́лом		сѣ́лима
Loc.	сѣ́лу		сѣ́лима

The neuter nouns ѡ́ко = *eye*, ѡ́во (or ѡ́хо) = *ear*, плѣ́че = *shoulder*, are declined in the sing. exactly like the above examples, but in the pl. they have preserved the old *dual* forms for nom. acc. voc. : ѡ́чи, gen. ѡ́чѧ, dat. inst. loc. ѡ́чима = *eyes*, ѡ́ши, ѡ́шѧ, ѡ́шима = *ears*, but плѣ́чи (nom. acc. voc.), плѣ́чѧ or плѣ́чѧ (gen.), and плѣ́чима (dat. inst. loc.) = *shoulders*, and rank as feminine nouns ending in a consonant like ствѣ́ри, cf. p. 48, e.g. ѡ́ве ѡ́чи = *these eyes*, ѡ́ве ѡ́ши = *these ears*, ѡ́ве плѣ́чи = *these shoulders*.

A number of neuter nouns insert in all the cases except the nom. acc. and voc. sing. the syllables -ен- or -ет-. Examples: плѐме (stem: племен-<sup>1</sup>) = *tribe*, дѹгме (stem: дугмет-) = *button*.

Sing. Nom.	плѐме	Pl.	племѐна
Gen.	плѐмена		племѐнѧ
Dat.	плѐмену		племѐнѧма
Acc.	плѐме		племѐна
Voc.	плѐме		племѐна
Inst.	плѐменом		племѐнѧма
Loc.	плѐмену		племѐнѧма
Sing. Nom.	дѹгме	Pl.	дугмѐта
Gen.	дѹгмета		дугмѐтѧ
Dat.	дѹгмету		дугмѐтѧма
Acc.	дѹгме		дугмѐта
Voc.	дѹгме		дугмѐта
Inst.	дѹгметом		дугмѐтѧма
Loc.	дѹгмету		дугмѐтѧма

The neuter nouns нѐбо = *sky, heaven*, чѹдо<sup>2</sup> = *marvel*, and тѐло = *body*, are declined as follows :

Sing. Nom.	нѐбо	Pl.	небѐса
Gen.	нѐба		небѐсѧ
Dat.	нѐбу		небѐсѧма
Acc.	нѐбо		небѐса
Voc.	нѐбо		небѐса
Inst.	нѐбом		небѐсѧма
Loc.	нѐбу		небѐсѧма

<sup>1</sup> These nouns all originally belonged to different declensions (cf. *nomen, nominis* in Latin), but have now become assimilated in the nom. sing. with the other neuter nouns.

<sup>2</sup> From which are derived чѹдити се (Class V, 1) = *to be surprised, astonished*, and чѹдноват = *extraordinary*.

## CHAPTER 5

## Reading Exercise

(For the words cf. also the Vocabulary, pp. 26 ff.)

1. Mècār<sup>1</sup> (ог кàсапин<sup>1</sup>) прòдàје<sup>2</sup> мèсо : гòвеђе<sup>3</sup> (i.e. мèсо) ог гòвеђину,<sup>3</sup> тèлеће<sup>4</sup> ог тèлетину,<sup>4</sup> јàгњеће<sup>5</sup> ог јàгњетину,<sup>5</sup> òвчије<sup>6</sup> ог òвчетину,<sup>6</sup> свìњско<sup>7</sup> ог свìњетину.<sup>7</sup> 2. Òн прòдàје кобàсице,<sup>8</sup> шўнке,<sup>9</sup> сýво<sup>10</sup> мèсо (ог пàстрму<sup>10</sup>), мàст,<sup>11</sup> сàло,<sup>12</sup> слàнину.<sup>13</sup> 3. Бàкалин<sup>14</sup> прòдàје шèкер,<sup>15</sup> кàву<sup>16</sup> (ог кàфу), чàј, брàшно, сò,<sup>17</sup> ўље<sup>18</sup> (ог зейтин<sup>18</sup>), сìрће,<sup>19</sup> шпìритус<sup>20</sup> бìбер,<sup>21</sup> пìринач,<sup>22</sup> крìз,<sup>23</sup> бàдем,<sup>24</sup> кàкао,<sup>25</sup> чоколàду,<sup>26</sup> макарòне,<sup>27</sup> àнанасе,<sup>28</sup> сýво грòжђе,<sup>29</sup> сýву рìбу,<sup>30</sup> àјвàр.<sup>31</sup> 4. Баштòвàн<sup>32</sup> ог пìљàр<sup>32</sup> прòдàје пòврће<sup>33</sup> (ог зèлєн<sup>33</sup>): крòмпìр,<sup>34</sup> кўпус,<sup>35</sup> спàнàћ,<sup>36</sup> кèљ,<sup>37</sup> пàсўљ,<sup>38</sup> бòб,<sup>39</sup> сòчìво,<sup>40</sup> грàшак,<sup>41</sup> борàнију,<sup>42</sup> салàту,<sup>43</sup> крàставце,<sup>44</sup> патлицàне,<sup>45</sup> тìкве,<sup>46</sup> шпàргле,<sup>47</sup> лўк,<sup>48</sup> келерàбу,<sup>49</sup> рòткве,<sup>50</sup> цвèкле,<sup>51</sup> цèлер,<sup>52</sup> шаргарèпу,<sup>53</sup> пàприку,<sup>54</sup> пèршун,<sup>55</sup> рèн.<sup>56</sup> 5. Òн прòдàје вòће : јàбуке,<sup>57</sup> крўшке,<sup>58</sup> шљìве,<sup>59</sup> трèшње,<sup>60</sup> вìшње,<sup>61</sup> јàгоде,<sup>62</sup> кàјсије,<sup>63</sup> брèскве,<sup>64</sup> лубèнице,<sup>65</sup> дìње,<sup>66</sup> грòжђе,<sup>67</sup> òрахе,<sup>68</sup> лèшњìке,<sup>69</sup> рìбизле,<sup>70</sup> мàлине,<sup>71</sup> òгрòзд,<sup>72</sup> смòкве,<sup>73</sup> банàне,<sup>74</sup> помòрàнце,<sup>75</sup> лìмунове.<sup>76</sup> 6. Òн прòдàје жìто :<sup>77</sup> шèницу,<sup>78</sup> кукуруз,<sup>79</sup> јèчам,<sup>80</sup> зòб<sup>81</sup> (ог òвас). 7. Òн прòдàје сìр, кàјмак,<sup>82</sup> мàсло (ог пўтер<sup>83</sup>) јàја и живìну<sup>84</sup>: пìлиће,<sup>85</sup> кòкòшке,<sup>86</sup> пèтлове,<sup>87</sup> гўске,<sup>88</sup> плòвке,<sup>89</sup> кўрке,<sup>90</sup> јàрèбице,<sup>91</sup> прèпелице.<sup>92</sup> 8. Обўћàр<sup>93</sup> прàви<sup>94</sup> и прòдàје òбуку<sup>95</sup> : дўбоке<sup>96</sup> цìпеле,<sup>96</sup> плìтке<sup>97</sup> цìпеле,<sup>97</sup> чìзме,<sup>98</sup> пàпуче,<sup>99</sup> кàљаче.<sup>100</sup> 9. Òн прòдàје мàст за црне<sup>101</sup> цìпеле, за жўте<sup>102</sup> цìпеле, пàнтљìке<sup>103</sup> за цìпеле, дугмèта<sup>104</sup> за цìпеле. 10. Крòдjàч<sup>105</sup> прàви и прòдàје одèло : кàпўт, прèслук, пàнталòне, зìмски,<sup>106</sup> кàпўт,



25 cocoa. 26 chocolate. 27 macaroni. 28 pine-apple. 29 raisins.  
 30 salt fish. 31 caviar. 32 fruiterer. 33 vegetables. 34 potatoes.  
 35 cabbages. 36 spinach. 37 kale. 38 haricot beans. 39 broad  
 beans. 40 lentils. 41 peas. 42 kidney beans, scarlet runner = *French  
 beans*. 43 salad. 44 cucumber. 45 tomatoes (црвенї or red ;  
 пла̀ви (blue) п. are *aubergine* or *egg-plant*). 46 marrow or pump-  
 kin. 47 asparagus. 48 onion (црнї or black ; N.B. бѣлї (white)  
 л. = *garlic* ; прѣзїплїѣк = *leeks*). 49 colrabi. 50 radish. 51 beetroot.  
 52 celery. 53 carrots. 54 paprika. 55 parsley. 56 horse-radish.  
 57 apples. 58 pears. 59 plums. 60 sweet cherries. 61 sour cherries.  
 62 strawberries. 63 apricots. 64 peaches. 65 water-melons.  
 66 sweet-melons. 67 grapes. 68 walnuts. 69 hazel-nuts. 70 red  
 currants. 71 raspberries. 72 gooseberries. 73 figs. 74 bananas.  
 75 oranges. 76 lemons. 77 corn (cereals in general). 78 wheat.  
 79 maize. 80 barley. 81 oats. 82 cream. 83 butter. 84 poultry, fowls.  
 85 chickens. 86 hens. 87 cocks. 88 geese. 89 ducks. 90 turkeys.  
 91 partridge. 92 quails. 93 shoemaker. 94 makes. 95 boots and  
 shoes. 96 boots. 97 shoes. 98 top-boots. 99 slippers. 100 galoshes.  
 101 black. 102 yellow. 103 laces. 104 buttons. 105 tailor.  
 106 winter-. 107 summer-. 108 riding-breeches. 109 ordinary,  
 every-day. 110 morning-coat (long). 111 dinner-jacket.  
 112 evening dress. 113 ladies' tailor, dressmaker. 114 women's.  
 115 costumes. 116 mantle. 117 carpenter. 118 cupboard.  
 119 shelves. 120 restaurant-keeper. 121 beverage. 122 brandy,  
 especially of plums, also called шлївовица. 123 cognac.  
 124 rum. 125 soda-water. 126 lemonade. 127 raspberry-syrup.  
 128 mineral waters. 129 hotel-keeper. 130 keeps. 131 breakfast.  
 132 lunch (or dinner in the middle of the day). 133 tea. 134 supper  
 (or dinner in the evening). 135 lets. 136 first. 137 floor or story.  
 138 second. 139 third. 140 concierge. 141 waiter. 142 man-  
 servant. 143 maid (-servant). 144 bath-room. 145 lavatory, W.C.  
 146 billiard-table. 147 playing-cards. 148 dominoes. 149 chess.  
 150 hosier's, haberdasher's, and milliner's. 151 shop (or дѣкѣн).  
 152 linen (underlinen). 153 vests. 154 ties. 155 hats. 156 scents.  
 157 ironmonger. 158 steel. 159 copper (N.B. brass is мѣснр).  
 160 lock. 161 key. 162 revolver. 163 rifle. 164 machine (N.B.  
 машинѣ is also now always used for matches, though жїїжица  
 is the proper word ; a *box of matches* is кѣтиѣ машинѣ).

<sup>165</sup> coffee-machine. <sup>166</sup> machine for grinding nuts. <sup>167</sup> mincing-machine. <sup>168</sup> chains. <sup>169</sup> shovel. <sup>170</sup> hoe. <sup>171</sup> spade. <sup>172</sup> axe. <sup>173</sup> horse-shoe. <sup>174</sup> nail. <sup>175</sup> hammer. <sup>176</sup> tyre. <sup>177</sup> spring. <sup>178</sup> saddler. <sup>179</sup> saddles. <sup>180</sup> harness. <sup>181</sup> bit, bridle. <sup>182</sup> leather. <sup>183</sup> strap. <sup>184</sup> whip. <sup>185</sup> carriage-maker, wheelwright. <sup>186</sup> single-horse carriage. <sup>187</sup> waggon, cart. <sup>188</sup> two-wheeled cart. <sup>189</sup> cab. <sup>190</sup> wooden donkey-saddle. <sup>191</sup> railway-station. <sup>192</sup> steamer-station.

## CHAPTER 6

PERSONAL AND DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS AND THE USE OF THE PRESENT TENSE OF *TO BE*

I. The Personal Pronouns are declined as follows :

Sing.	1st	2nd	3rd person.		
	person.	person.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	jâ	tî	òн	òна	òно
Gen.	mène, ме	tèбе, те	hèга, га	hè, je	hèга, га
Dat.	mèни, ми	tèби, ти	hèму, му	hòj, jøj	hèму, му
Acc.	mène, ме	tèбе, те	hèга, га	hÿ, jÿ, je	hèга, га
Voc.	—	tî	—	—	—
Inst.	мнòм	тòбом	hîм(е)	hòм	hîм
Loc.	mèни	tèби	hèму, му	hòj	hèму, му
Pl.					
Nom.	mî	vî	òни	òне	òна
Gen.	hâс	vâс		hîх, их	
Dat.	hâма (ог hâm)	vâма (ог vâm)		hîма, им	
Acc.	hâс	vâс		hîх, их	
Voc.	—	vî		—	
Inst.	hâма	vâма		hîма	
Loc.	hâма	vâма		hîма	



**Note on the short forms of the Personal Pronouns.**

The long forms of these pronouns, e.g. мѐне, тѣбе, are used when they are emphasized, especially at the beginning of a sentence, e.g. њѐга сам вѣдео а нѣ тѣбе = *it was he whom I saw, not thou*; also usually when governed by prepositions, especially those of one syllable, e.g. уз мѐне = *close to me*; but when, as often happens, such prepositions appear in disyllabic form, then the short form can be used, e.g. љзā ме. The acc. sing. of ђн occasionally appears in the contracted form њ, e.g. after such prepositions as за, на, у, e.g. нā њ = *on to him*. The commonest form of the acc. sing. of ђна is је; ју is only used when the meaning would be doubtful, e.g. ђн ју је пољубио = *he kissed her* (not је је). N.B. the acc. sing. of ђно is the same as the gen. sing., not like the nom. sing, cf. pp. 37, 56.

The reflexive pronoun is declined thus :

Nom.	—
Gen.	себе. <sup>1</sup>
Dat.	себи.
Acc.	себе, се.
Voc.	—
Inst.	себѡм.
Loc.	себи.

## II. The Demonstrative Pronouns are :

Sing. ђвāј (*m.*), ђвā (*f.*), ђвѡ (*n.*) = *this*.

Pl. ђвī, ђве, ђвā = *these*.

Sing. тāј, тā, тѡ = *that*.

Pl. тī, тѣ, тā = *those*.

<sup>1</sup> This pronoun can be used of any person in either number, but must always refer directly to the subject of the sentence; it can mean: *myself, thyself, himself, herself, itself, ourselves, yourselves, or themselves*; it has no nominative or vocative.

Sing. òhāj, òhā, òhō = *that (yonder)*.

Pl. òhī, òhē, òhā = *those (yonder)*.

These are the complete forms of the demonstrative pronouns mentioned on p. 25; they are declined as follows:

N.	òvāj	òvā	òvō	tāj	tā	tō
G.	òvogā (or òvog) <sup>1</sup>	òvē	òvogā (or òvog) <sup>1</sup>	tōga (or tōg) <sup>1</sup>	tē	tōga (or tōg) <sup>1</sup>
D.	òvomē (or òvom) <sup>1</sup>	òvōj	òvomē (or òvom) <sup>1</sup>	tōme (or tōm) <sup>1</sup>	tōj	tōme (or tōm) <sup>1</sup>
A.	òvāj (or òvoga) <sup>2</sup>	òvū	òvo	tāj (tō- ga) <sup>2</sup>	tū	tō
V.	—	—	—	—	—	—
I.	òvīm	òvōm	òvim	tīm	tōm	tīm
L.	òvomē (or òvom) <sup>1</sup>	òvōj	òvomē (or òvom) <sup>1</sup>	tōme (or tōm) <sup>1</sup>	tōj	tōme (or tōm) <sup>1</sup>

N.	òvī	òvē	òvā	тн	tē	tā
G.	òvīx	òvīx	òvīx	тнх	тнх	тнх
D.	òvīma <sup>3</sup>	òvīma <sup>3</sup>	òvīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>
A.	òvē	òvē	òvā	tē	tē	tā
V.	—	—	—	—	—	—
I.	òvīma <sup>3</sup>	òvīma <sup>3</sup>	òvīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>
L.	òvīma <sup>3</sup>	òvīma <sup>3</sup>	òvīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>	tīma <sup>3</sup>

òhāj is declined like òvāj.

### Vocabulary

студент (*m.*) = *student*

професор (*m.*) = *professor,*

*master of a secondary school*

ѡак (*m.*) = *schoolboy*

ученик (*m.*) = *schoolboy*

ученица (*f.*) = *schoolgirl*

учитель (*m.*) = *man teacher*

учительница (*f.*) = *a woman  
teacher*

човек (*m.*) = *man*

лъди (*m. pl.*) = *men, people*

мъж (*m.*) = *husband*

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 65, note 1.

<sup>2</sup> The acc. sing. masc. varies according to the rule given on p. 37, note 2, and on p. 65, note 2.

<sup>3</sup> Colloquially, but also in literature, especially when there are several consecutive words with the same ending, this final vowel is omitted.

жѣна (*f.*) = *woman, wife*  
 òтац (*m.*) = *father*  
 мѣјка (or мѣти) (*f.*) = *mother*  
 дѣте (*n.*) = *child*  
 дѣца (*f. coll. sing.*) = *children*  
 брѣт (*m.*) = *brother*  
 брѣѣа (*f. coll. sing.*) = *brothers*  
 сѣстра (*f.*) = *sister*  
 госпòдин (*m.*) = *Mr., gentle-*  
*man*  
 госпòда (*f. coll. sing.*) = *gentle-*  
*men, Messrs.*  
 гòспођа (*f.*) = *Mrs., lady*  
 гòспођица (*f.*) = *Miss, young*  
*lady*  
 млáдйѣ (*m.*) = *young man*  
 рáдник (*m.*) = *workman*  
 рáдница (*f.*) = *workwoman*  
 живòтиѣа (*f.*) = *animal, beast*  
 јáгње (*n.*) = *lamb*  
 јáгњáд (*f. coll. sing.*) = *lambs*  
 пáс (*m.*) } = *dog*  
 псѣто (*n.*) }  
 Пѣтар = *Peter*

Пáвле = *Paul*  
 Јòвáнѣа = *Jane*  
 Мáрија = *Mary*  
 Америкáнац (*m.*) = *an Ameri-*  
*can (m.)*  
 Америкáнка (*f.*) = *an Ameri-*  
*can (f.)*  
 Ёнглѣз (*m.*) = *an Englishman*  
 Ёнглѣскиѣа (*f.*) = *an English-*  
*woman*  
 Италијáн<sup>1</sup> (*m.*) = *an Italian*  
*(m.)*  
 Италијáнка<sup>1</sup> (*f.*) = *an Italian*  
*(f.)*  
 Нѣмац (*m.*) = *a German (m.)*  
 Нѣмица (*f.*) = *a German (f.)*  
 Рѹс (*m.*) = *a Russian (m.)*  
 Рѹскиѣа (*f.*) = *a Russian (f.)*  
 Срѣбин (*m.*) = *a Serbian (m.)*  
 Срѣпкиѣа (*f.*) = *a Serbian (f.)*  
 Фрáнцѹз (*m.*) = *a Frenchman*  
 Фрáнцѹскиѣа (*f.*) = *a French-*  
*woman*  
 For conjunctions, cf. p. 189.

### Note

Collective nouns such as дѣца, брѣѣа, госпòда, correspond-  
 ing to the nouns дѣте (*n.*), брѣт (*m.*), госпòдин (*m.*), and all  
 ending in -ад, such as јáгњáд, follow the declension of the  
 singular of the feminine substantives, but the verb with  
 which they are used is in the plural, e.g. òвáј госпòдин  
 је . . . = *this gentleman is*, or тáј брѣт је . . . = *that brother*  
*is . . .*; here the pronouns òвáј and тáј are masc. and the verb  
 is in the sing., but òвá госпòда су . . ., or тá брѣѣа су . . . =  
*these gentlemen are . . ., those brothers are . . .*; here the  
 pronouns are fem. sing. and the verb is in the plural.

<sup>1</sup> The initial и is frequently dropped.

## Serbian Sentences

1. Já сам студент. 2. Тѣ си дѣте. 3. Вѣ сте професор. 4. Шта је онај човек?—Он је учитељ. 5. Кд је она жена?—Она је учитељица. 6. Шта је псѣто?—Оно је животиња. 7. Петар и Павле нису професори, они су учитељи. 8. Јованка и Марија нису учитељице, оне су ученице. 9. Шта су псѣто и јагње?—Они су животиње. 10. Мѣ смо студенти. 11. Вѣ сте деца. 12. Вѣ сте професори. 13. Ово је перо, то је олѡвка (ог плајвѡз), оно је мастило. 14. Ова гдѣпођа и та гдѣпођица су сѣстре. 15. Ово дѣте и то су ћаци.<sup>1</sup> 16. Јѣсу ли ова деца ученици?—Јѣсу. 17. Ово је Енглѣз, то је Францѡз, оно је Србин. 18. Тѣ младѣћи и они нису браћа. 19. Тѣ гдѣпође су Италијанке, а оне гдѣпођице су Енглѣскиње. 20. Ово су Немце. 21. Ове жѣне су раднице. 22. Кд су тѣ људи?—Ово су Немци. 23. Ово су Енглѣзи и Енглѣскиње, то су Францѡзи и Францѡскиње, оно су Рѡси и Рѡскиње. 24. Ови људи су Италијани, тѣ су Срби, а они су Немци. 25. Јѣсу ли ово Францѡзи?—Нѣсу, то су Италијани. 26. Јѣсу ли тѣ људи Енглѣзи? Нѣсу, ово су Америкѡнци. 27. Ово нѣсу пера, ово су олѡвке (ог плајвѡзи). 28. Јѣсте ли вѣ господин А.?—Нѣсам, ја сам професор Б. 29. Да ли су она госпѡда Срби?—Јѣсу. 30. Зѡр сте вѣ Енглѣз!?—Јѣсам. 31. Зѡр нѣсте вѣ Енглѣскиња!?—Нѣсам, ја сам Америкѡнка. 32. Вѣ сте Српкиња?—Да (јѣсам).

## Note

Pronouns (and adjectives) referring to two or more neuter nouns in the sing. are put in the masc. pl. (cf. sentence 9 above). But if they refer (1) to neuter nouns in the plural,

<sup>1</sup> Nom. sing. ћак, nom. pl. ћаци, cf. p. 18.

(2) to feminine collective nouns used as the plural of the corresponding masculine or neuter singulars, the pronouns (and adjectives) are put in the neuter pl. or fem. sing., which happen to be the same, e.g.

- |   |                          |
|---|--------------------------|
| 1. <i>f.</i> дѣца су . . . <i>the children are . . .</i>              | } <i>n.</i> она су . . . |
| 2. <i>f.</i> јагњѡд су . . . <i>the lambs are . . .</i>               |                          |
| 3. дѣца и јагњѡд су . . . <i>the children<br/>and lambs are . . .</i> |                          |
|   | } <i>they are.</i>       |

### English Sentences

1. You are a student.
2. What is he?—He is a professor.
3. What is she?—She is a teacher.
4. Peter is not a teacher, he is a schoolboy.
5. Mary is a schoolgirl.
6. This is a dog.
7. That girl and this woman are not sisters.
8. This child and that are brothers.
9. Who is that man?—He is an Englishman.
10. Who is that lady?—She is a Frenchwoman.
11. Are they (*f.*) work-women?—Yes, they are.
12. Are these men Italian?—No, they are not; they are French.
13. Are you a Serbian (*m.*)?—No, I am not; I am a Russian (*m.*).
14. You are a Serbian (*f.*)?—Yes, I am.
15. Are you not English (*f.*)?—No, I am not; I am American (*f.*).
16. What is this?—That is a pencil.
17. What is that?—This is a pen.
18. Is that a dog?—No, it is not; it is a lamb.
19. Is this ink?—Yes, it is.
20. Who is that young lady?—That is Miss X.
21. Are these children schoolboys?—Yes, they are.

## CHAPTER 7

### THE PAST TENSE OF *TO BE*

THIS is formed by means of the short forms of the present tense of бѣти, followed by the past participle active of the same verb, which is :

Sing. : *m.* бѣо, *f.* бѣла, *n.* бѣло.

Pl. : *m.* бѣли, *f.* бѣле, *n.* бѣла.

SINGULAR	}	1. jâ сам бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла f.) сам = <i>I have been, I was.</i>
		2. тѣ си бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла f.) си = <i>thou hast been, thou wast.</i>
		3. ѡн је бѣо or бѣо је = <i>he has been, he was.</i> ѡна је бѣла or бѣла је = <i>she has been, she was.</i> ѡно је бѣло or бѣло је = <i>it has been, it was.</i>
PLURAL	}	1. мѣ смо бѣли (бѣле f.) or бѣли (бѣле f.) смо = <i>we have been, we were.</i>
		2. вѣ сте бѣли (бѣле f.) or бѣли (бѣле f.) сте = <i>you have been, you were.</i>
		3. ѡни су бѣли or бѣли су } = <i>they have been,</i> ѡне су бѣле or бѣле су } = <i>they were.</i> ѡна су бѣла or бѣла су }

This tense may have the meaning of either *was* or *have been* in English, e.g.

1. jâ сам бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла f. сам) jÿтрѡс ŷ пољу = *I was in the country this morning.*
2. бѣо (бѣла f.) сам (or jâ сам бѣо, бѣла f.) jÿчѣ y Лондѡну = *I was in London yesterday.*
3. бѣо (бѣла f.) сам y Парѣзу = *I have been in Paris.*

The interrogative forms are :

jѣсам ли (jâ) бѣо (бѣла f.) ? or дâ ли сам (jâ) бѣо (бѣла f.) ? = *Have I been, was I ?*

jѣ ли (ѡн) бѣо ? or дâ ли је (ѡн) бѣо ? = *Has he been, was he ?*

jѣсте ли (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле f.) ? or дâ ли сте (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле f.) ? = *Have you been, were you ?*

Or with зâр, cf. p. 33.

зâр сте (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле f.) ? = *Have you been, were you ?*

зâр су (ѡне) бѣле ? = *Have they (f.) been, were they (f.) ?*

But such questions are also frequently asked in the form of an assumption, cf. p. 33.

The negative forms are :

(jâ) нѣсам бѣо (бѣла *f.*) = *I have not been, I was not.*

(вѣ) нѣсте бѣли (бѣле *f.*) = *You have not been, you were not.*

(òни) нѣсу бѣли = *They (m.) have not been, they were not.*

The negative-interrogative forms are :

нѣсте ли (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле *f.*) = *Have you not been, were you not ?*

Or more emphatic forms with зàр, cf. p. 33.

зàр нѣсте (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле *f.*) ? ! = *Have you not been, were you not ? !*

зàр нѣсу (òни) бѣли ? ! = *Have they (m.) not been, were they (m.) not ? !*

зàр нѣсу (òне) бѣле ? ! = *Have they (f.) not been, were they (f.) not ? !*

## CHAPTER 8

### ADJECTIVES (AND ADJECTIVAL ADVERBS)

THE adjective in Serbian has two forms, definite and indefinite. The definite adjectives are only used when reference is made to a particular object ; in all other cases the indefinite adjectives are used. That is to say, the difference between the two is like that between the definite and the indefinite article in English. It is only in the singular of the masculine adjective that a difference of form has survived, e.g.

Indefinite : стар<sup>1</sup> чòвек = *an old man* (cf. *ein alter Mann*).

Definite : стари чòвек = *the old man* (cf. *der alte Mann*).

<sup>1</sup> The word мàтòр, *fem.* мàтòра, is also used for *old*, disrespectfully, e.g. of meat which is tough.

In the feminine and neuter nom. sing. and in the whole nom. pl. the difference is only one of the quality of the accent and is hardly noticeable even to Serbians. In general, it may be said that the indefinite form is being gradually superseded by the definite, but the forms are often used inconsistently.

In the sing. the indefinite masc. adjectives end in a consonant or in -o, representing a lost -л (cf. p. 16), the fem. end in -a, the neuter mostly in -o, a few in -e if the stem is soft; in the pl. the masc. end in -и, the fem. in -е, the neut. in -а.

The adjectives may be divided into the following categories: (1) adjectives denoting quality and size, (2) possessive adjectives, and (3) adjectives denoting the material of which things are made, e.g.

1. зѣлен = *green*, дѡбар = *good*, вѣшт = *skilful*, *clever*, вѣлнкѣ = *big*, *large*, мѡлѣ = *little*, *small*.
2. српскѣ = *Serbian*, ѣнглѣскѣ = *English*, ѡчев = *father's*.
3. гвѡзден = *iron*, свѣлен = *silk*, златан = *golden*.

The adjectives denoting quality, size, and material may be used either in the *indefinite* or in the *definite* form, with certain exceptions: the adjectives вѣлнкѣ = *big*, *large*, мѡлѣ = *little*, *small*, as well as a large number derived from expressions of time, e.g. дѡнашнѣ = *of to-day* (from дѡнас = *to-day*), вѣчѣрнѣ = *evening* (from вѣче or вѣчер = *evening*), лѣтнѣ = *summer* (from лѣто = *summer*), are used *only* in the definite form; on the other hand, рѡд = *glad* is used *only* in the indefinite form.

Of the possessive adjectives, those ending in -ов and -ин, e.g. Петрѡв = *Peter's*, сѣстрин = *sister's*, are *only* used in the indefinite form; those in -скѣ, e.g. ѣнглѣскѣ = *English*, are *only* used in the definite form (cf. p. 63).

In the nom. sing. of the indefinite forms of the masc.



adjectives, if the stem ends in a group of consonants (except the groups -ст, -шт, -зд, -жд) the letter -а is inserted before the last consonant for the sake of euphony, e.g. ймӯкан = *well to do*, бѡлестан = *ill* (cf. p. 16).

The possessive adjectives are derived from the respective nouns by adding -ов, -ев, or -ин. If the stem is hard -ов is added, if it is soft, -ев. The ending -ин is most frequently added to the stem of the nouns ending in -а. Examples :

госпѡдин = *gentleman, the master*, adj. госпѡдинов = *the master's*.

прїјатељ = *friend* , прїјатељев = *friend's*.

сѡстра = *sister* , сѡстрин = *sister's*.

вѡјвода = *general*<sup>1</sup> , вѡјводин = *of the general*.

However, these possessive adjectives must not be confused with those formed with the ending -ски, which have quite different meanings, e.g.

госпѡдин : гѡсподскї = *lordly*.

прїјатељ : прїјатѡльскї = *friendly*.

сѡстра : сѡстринскї = *sisterly*.

вѡјвода : вѡјводскї = *of a general or like a general* ;

which can also be used *adverbially*, e.g.

прїјатѡльскї = *in a friendly way*,

and cf. српскї = *Serbian*, and also *in Serbian*, or *in Serbian fashion*.

Those nouns ending in ар, as ѡвчār = *shepherd*, госпѡдār = *master*, form the adjective either in ов or ев : овчāров (ев), госпѡдāров (ев).

Masculine nouns ending in ц, such as ѡтац = *father*, make their possessive adjectives as follows : ѡчев ; the word кнѡз = *prince*, has кнѡжев. See p. 18.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. генѡрāl or ѡенѡрāl is also used.

Nouns with stems in *к* or *ц*, such as *мāјка* = *mother*, or *Мйлица* = *Milica* (a fem. name), change *к* and *ц* to *ч* before *н*, e.g. *мāјчин*, *Мйличин*. If the stem ends in *г* or *х* it does not change, e.g. *слўга* = *man-servant*, *снāха* = *daughter-in-law* : *слўгин*, *снāхин* or *снāнн*.

### Adverbs formed from Adjectives

The neuter form (nom. sing.) of every adjective, except those in category 2, can be used as an adverb, e.g. *дōбро* = *well, very well, all right* ; cf. p. 184.

## CHAPTER 9

### DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES

THE adjectives are declined as follows :

#### I. Indefinite Adjectives

Example of a hard stem : *жўт*, *жўта*, *жўто* = *yellow*.

Sing. Nom.	жўт	жўта	жўто
Gen.	жўта	жўте	жўта
Dat.	жўту	жўтōј	жўту
Acc.	жўт or жўта <sup>1</sup>	жўту	жўто
Voc.	—	—	—
Inst.	жўтīм	жўтōм	жўтīм
Loc.	жўту	жўтōј	жўту
Pl. Nom.	жўтн	жўте	жўта
Gen.	жўтīх	жўтīх	жўтīх
Dat.	жўтīм	жўтīм	жўтīм
Acc.	жўте	жўте	жўта
Voc.	—	—	—
Inst.	жўтīм	жўтīм	жўтīм
Loc.	жўтīм	жўтīм	жўтīм

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note 2 on p. 65.

**Adjectives with soft stems**

Indefinite adjectives with soft stems are declined exactly like those with hard stems except that the nom. and acc. sing. neut. ends in -e, e.g. врѹћ, врѹћа, врѹће = *hot*.

**II. Definite Adjectives**

Example of a hard stem :

Sing. Nom.	жѹтї	жѹтā	жѹтō
Gen.	жѹтōга <sup>1</sup>	жѹтē	жѹтōга
Dat.	жѹтōме <sup>1</sup>	жѹтōј	жѹтōме
Acc.	жѹтї or жѹтōгā	жѹтѹ	жѹтō
Voc.	жѹтї	жѹтā	жѹтō
Inst.	жѹтїм	жѹтōм	жѹтїм
Loc.	жѹтōме <sup>1</sup>	жѹтōј	жѹтōме
Pl. Nom.	жѹтї	жѹтē	жѹтā
Gen.	жѹтїх	жѹтїх	жѹтїх
Dat.	жѹтїм	жѹтїм	жѹтїм
Acc.	жѹтē	жѹтē	жѹтē
Voc.	жѹтї	жѹтї	жѹтї
Inst.	жѹтїм	жѹтїм	жѹтїм
Loc.	жѹтїм	жѹтїм	жѹтїм

**Important notes**

1. There are alternative forms of the gen. and acc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. жѹтōг instead of жѹтōга, and of the dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. жѹтōм instead of жѹтōме, and these shorter forms are now those most generally used. Instead of жѹтōме the form жѹтōму is also sometimes to be found.

2. The acc. sing. of the masc. adjectives, both indefinite and definite, is the same as the gen. sing. when it qualifies

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 56, foot-note 3.

an *animate* or a once animate being, and the same as the nom. sing. when it qualifies an *inanimate* thing (cf. p. 37).

Examples :

ÿmām жÿтòг псà = *I have a yellow dog.*

ÿmām жÿт плàжвāз = *I have a yellow pencil.*

### Adjectives with soft stems

Definite adjectives with soft stems are declined exactly like those with hard stems except that the nom. and acc. sing. neut. ends in *-e*, the gen. sing. masc. and neut. in *-er* or *-era*, and the dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut. in *-em* or *-emy* instead of *-o*, *-og*, or *-ora*, and *-om* or *-omy* respectively, e.g. врÿкĕ, врÿкā, врÿкĕ = *hot*, nom. acc. sing. neut. врÿкĕ, gen. sing. masc. and neut. врÿкĕг or врÿкĕга, dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut. врÿкĕм or врÿкĕму.

## CHAPTER 10

### THE USE OF THE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS AND OF THE ADJECTIVES WITH THE PAST TENSE OF *TO BE*

THE possessive pronouns are :

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	
Sing.	мòј	мòја	мòје	} <i>my, mine.</i>
Pl.	мòји	мòје	мòја	
Sing.	нàш	нàша	нàше	} <i>our, ours.</i>
Pl.	нàши	нàше	нàша	
Sing.	твòј	твòја	твòје	} <i>thy, thine.</i>
Pl.	твòји	твòје	твòја	
Sing.	вàш	вàша	вàше	} <i>your, yours.</i>
Pl.	вàши	вàше	вàша	
Sing.	њèгов	њèгова	њèгово	} <i>his.</i>
Pl.	њèгови	њèгове	њèгова	

Sing.	њѐн <sup>1</sup>	њѐна	њѐно	} <i>her.</i>
Pl.	њѐни	њѐне	њѐна	
Sing.	њѝхов	њѝхова	њѝхово	} <i>their</i> (masc. & fem.).
Pl.	њѝхови	њѝхове	њѝхова	

The possessive-reflexive pronoun is :

Sing.	свѝј	свѝја	свѝје	} <i>one's own.</i>
Pl.	свѝји	свѝје	свѝја	

Like the personal-reflexive pronoun this can be used of any of the three persons in either number, but it must always refer directly to the subject of the sentence ; it can mean : *my own, thy own, his own, her own, its own, our own, your own, their own.*

These are declined as follows :

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
Sing. Nom.	мѝј	мѝја	мѝје
Gen.	мѝга	мѝје	мѝга
Dat.	мѝме	мѝјѝј	мѝме
Acc.	мѝј or мѝга <sup>2</sup>	мѝју	мѝје
Voc.	мѝј	мѝја	мѝје
Inst.	мѝјѝм	мѝјѝм	мѝјѝм
Loc.	мѝме	мѝјѝј	мѝме
Pl. Nom.	мѝји	мѝје	мѝја
Gen.	мѝјѝх	мѝјѝх	мѝјѝх
Dat.	мѝјѝм	мѝјѝм	мѝјѝм
Acc.	мѝје	мѝје	мѝје
Voc.	мѝји	мѝје	мѝје
Inst.	мѝјѝм	мѝјѝм	мѝјѝм
Loc.	мѝјѝм	мѝјѝм	мѝјѝм

твѝј, and the reflexive pronoun свѝј, are declined exactly

<sup>1</sup> Another form of this pronoun is ѝѝзн.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. note 2 on p. 68.

like *môj*, and like the definite adjective with a soft stem (cf. p. 66). The possessive pronouns *нѣш* and *вѣш* are also declined in the same way, but *нѣгов*, *нѣн*, and *нѣхов* are declined like the indefinite adjectives with a hard stem, e.g. *жѣт*, cf. p. 65.

### Important notes

1. There are alternative forms of the gen. and acc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. *môg* instead of *môga*, and of the dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. *môm* instead of *môme*, and these shorter forms are very generally used in conversation, though not in literature.

But there are also other fuller forms of these same cases which are sometimes to be met with, viz. gen. *mòjera*, dat. and loc. *mòjemu*. Cf. note 1 on p. 65.

2. The acc. sing. masc. varies in the case of all the possessive pronouns according to the rule given in note 2 on p. 65.

### Vocabulary

<i>рòдители</i> ( <i>m. pl.</i> ) = <i>parents</i>	<i>тётка</i> ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>aunt</i> (father's or mother's sister)
<i>сѣн</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>son</i>	
<i>кѣн</i> or <i>кѣрка</i> ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>daughter</i>	<i>брѣт</i> од <i>стрица</i>
<i>стѣра-мѣжка</i> ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>grandmother</i>	or <i>брѣтучед</i> } = <i>1st cousin</i>
<i>дѣда</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>grandfather</i>	<i>брѣт</i> од <i>тётке</i> } (masc.)
<i>бѣба</i> ( <i>f.</i> ) = (1) <i>grandmother</i> ,	<i>брѣт</i> од <i>ѣжѣка</i> }
(2) <i>old woman</i>	<i>сѣстра</i> од <i>стрица</i> } = <i>1st cousin</i>
<i>ѣнук</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>grandson</i>	<i>сѣстра</i> од <i>тётке</i> } (fem.)
<i>стриц</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>uncle</i> (father's brother)	<i>сѣстра</i> од <i>ѣжѣка</i> }
<i>стрина</i> ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>aunt</i> (father's brother's wife)	<i>синòвац</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) } = <i>nephew</i> (bro-
<i>ѣжѣк</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>uncle</i> (mother's brother)	<i>брѣтанац</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) } ther's son)
<i>ѣжна</i> ( <i>f.</i> ) = <i>aunt</i> (mother's brother's wife)	<i>сѣстрић</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>nephew</i> (sister's son)
<i>тѣча</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>uncle</i> (husband of father's or mother's sister)	<i>пашѣнози</i> (nom. sing. <i>пашѣног</i> ), <i>m.</i> = husbands of two sisters
	<i>свѣкар</i> ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>father-in-law</i> (husband's father)



## Reading Exercise

1. Мòј стрѝц је бѝо адвòкàт. 2. Мòја тètка је стàра жèна. 3. Мòје дèте је бѝло бòлесно. 4. Мòји стрѝчеви су бѝли бòгати. 5. Мòје тètке су вр̀ло стàре. 6. Мòја дèца су бѝла бòлесна. 7. Нàш стрѝц је ѝм̀у̀кан чòвек. 8. Нàша тètка је бѝла у Ѐнгл̀еској. 9. Нàше дèте је у пàрку. 10. Нàши стрѝчеви су бѝли у Фр̀анц̀уској. 11. Нàше тètке су бѝле ѝм̀у̀кне жèне. 12. Нàша дèца су бѝла у шètњи. 13. Јè ли твòј òтац учитѐљ?—Нѝје, он је оф̀иц̀ѝр. 14. Јè ли жѝва твòја мàјка?—Јèст.<sup>1</sup> 15. Гдè је твòје сèло?—На òноме брèгу. 16. Гдè су твòји рòдители?—У Бèдграду. 17. Јèсу ли òво твòје књѝге?—Јèсу. 18. Јèсу ли òво твòја дèца?—Нѝсу. 19. Јè ли ваш òтац здр̀ав?—Нѝје, бòлестан је. 20. Гдè је вàша к̀у̀ка?—У сèлу. 21. Дà ли је вàше сèло вèлико?—Нѝје, мàло је. 22. Зàр нѝсу вàши рòдители у Бèдграду?!—Нѝсу, они су у сèлу. 23. Зàр су òво вàше књѝге?—Јèсу. 24. Вàша сèла су на òнѝм брегòвима?—Јèсу. 25. Нèгов прѝјатѐљ нѝје бѝо у Пар̀изу. 26. Нèгова прѝјатѐљица нѝје учитѐљица. 27. Нèгово јàг̀ње нѝје бѝло у вр̀ту. 28. Нèгови прѝјатѐљи нѝсу бѝли кòд ку̀ке. 29. Нèгове прѝјатѐљице нѝсу бѝле у Лондòну. 30. Нèгова јàг̀њàд нѝсу бѝла у вр̀ту. 31. Нèн м̀у̀ж нѝје бѝо бòгат. 32. Нèна хàлина нѝје бѝла лèпа. 33. Нèно лице нѝје блèдо. 34. Нèни òбрази нѝсу румèни. 35. Нèне òчи нѝсу ц̀рне. 36. Нèна дèца нѝсу бѝла у̀ школи. 37. Зар нѝхов прѝјатѐљ нѝје бѝо у Лондòну?!—Нѝје. 38. Дà ли је нѝхова сèстра бѝла учитѐљица?—Јèст.<sup>1</sup> 39. Нѝје ли нѝхово дèте бѝло бòлесно?—Јèст.<sup>1</sup> 40. Нѝхови рòдители нѝсу бѝли нѝкада бòгати. 41. Нѝхове к̀ѐри (òг к̀ерке) нѝсу бѝле на зàбави. 42. Нѝхова дèца нѝсу бѝла здр̀ава.

<sup>1</sup> A very colloquial alternative form is jèste and jès.



## Notes

4. стрѣц (*m.*)=*uncle*, *pl.* стрѣчеви (*not* стрицеви). The same with ђтац (*m.*)=*father*, *pl.* ђчеви; зѣц (*m.*)=*hare*, *pl.* зѣчеви, кнѣз (*m.*)=*prince*, *pl.* кнѣжеви.

12. бѣти у шѣтњи=*to be on a walk*; ићи у шѣтњу=*to go for a walk*.

25. Many fem. nouns are formed from masc. nouns by means of the ending -ица, e.g. пријатељ—пријатељица.

28. код куће=*at home*.

30. Neuter collective nouns ending in -ад, denoting persons or animals, seldom things, are usually derived from the neuter nouns whose stems end in -ет (*gen. sing.*), e.g. јагње (*n.*)=*gen. sing.* јагњета, *coll. pl.* јагњад, сироче (*n.*)=*orphan (m. or f.)*, *gen. sing.* сирочета, *coll. pl.* сирочад, &c., cf. p. 50; the *gen.* of these ends in -и, cf. pp. 48, 57.

35. ђчи = *eyes* are in the *pl.* declined as follows: Nom. Acc. Voc. ђчи, Gen. ђчијѹ, Dat. Inst. Loc. ђчима, cf. pp. 49, 50.

41. кћери, cf. p. 48 f.

## English Sentences

1. My aunt was rich. 2. My uncles were barristers. 3. My uncle has been in France. 4. My child was not ill. 5. Those are my books. 6. Where are my children?—They are in the park. 7. Where are your aunts?—In Belgrade. 8. Is your mother a teacher?—No, she is not. 9. His father is a teacher. 10. Their village is on that hill (yonder). 11. This is his book. 12. Where is her book? 13. Where are her children? 14. Your parents are in Belgrade?—Yes, they are. 15. Are your parents not in the village<sup>1</sup>?—No, they are not; they are in Belgrade. 16. Are these books yours?—No, they are not. 17. This is the house of my friend. 18. Her lamb was not in the garden. 19. Their friends (*m.*) were not at home. 20. His friends (*f.*) are in the country. 21. Her lambs are in the garden. 22. Her husband is ill. 23. Her dress was nice. 24. His cheeks are not rosy, they are pale. 25. Her eyes are dark. 26. Have their children not been at school? 27. Where has her daughter been?—She was at a party. 28. Have

<sup>1</sup> = 'in the country'.

their sisters (ever) been in London ?—No, they have not ; but they have been in Paris. 29. Where were you yesterday (jūčē) ?—We were at home. 30. She was very ill yesterday.

### Sentences especially illustrating Serbian relationships

Мѡј ђтац и твѡј су рѡђенā<sup>1</sup> браќа ; њихов ђтац је нāш дѡда, њихова мāјка је нāша бāба, мī смо њихови ўнуци. Твѡј ђтац је мѡј стрīц, њѡгова жѡна је мѡја стрīна, јā сам њѡгов синѡвац, тī си мѡј брāт од стрīца, ā и јā сам твѡј ; твѡја рѡђена сѡстра је мѡја сѡстра од стрīца, јā сам њѡн брāт од стрīца.—Твѡја мāјка и мѡја су рѡђене сѡстре ; њихова мāјка је мѡја бāба (ог старā-мāјка), јā сам њѡн ўнук. Мѡја мāјка је твѡја тѡтка, њѡн мўж је твѡј тѡча, тī си њѡн сѡстрић а мѡј брāт од тѡтке ; мѡја рѡђенā сѡстра је твѡја сѡстра од тѡтке.—Мѡја мāјка и твѡј ђтац су рѡђени брāт и сѡстра ; твѡј ђтац је мѡј ўјāк, њѡгова жѡна је мѡја ўјна, јā сам њѡгов сѡстрић ; мѡја мāти је твѡја тѡтка, тī си њѡн брāтанац ; тī си мѡј брāт од ўјāка, јā сам твѡј брāт од тѡтке ; твѡја рѡђенā сѡстра је мѡја сѡстра од ўјāка, а мѡја рѡђенā сѡстра је твѡја сѡстра од тѡтке.—Мўж мѡје сѡстре је зѡт мѡјих рѡдитѡљā и мѡј зѡт ; мѡј ђтац је њѡгов тāст, мѡја мāјка је њѡгова тāшта, мѡја сѡстра је њѡгова свāстика, а јā сам њѡгов шўрāк ; мѡја жѡна је њѡгова шўрњаја.—Жѡна мѡга брāта је снаја (ог сна, снаха) мѡјих рѡдитѡљā и мѡја снаја, мѡј ђтац је њѡн свѡкар, мѡја мāјка је њѡна свѡкрва, мѡја сѡстра је њѡна зāова, а јā сам њѡн дѡвер.—Мѡја жѡна и жѡна мѡга брāта су ўзāјамно јѡтрве. Мѡја жѡна и жѡна мѡга пријатеља су рѡђене сѡстре ; ѡн и јā смо пашѡнози.

<sup>1</sup> рѡђен, literally = *born*, from рѡдити = *to give birth to a child* (or *to bear fruit*) ; рѡдити се = *to be born*.

## CHAPTER 11

THE FUTURE TENSE OF *TO BE*

THE future tense of бѣти = *to be*, like that of every other Serbian verb, is formed by means of the auxiliary verb хтѣти = *to wish, to be willing, to want*. It is formed in two ways, either (1) by the shortened form of the present of this verb followed by an infinitive and preceded by the personal pronouns, in which case it resembles the English *I'll be*, or (2) if the personal pronouns are omitted, by the addition of these shortened forms to the stem of another verb.

The full forms of the present of хтѣти are :

- |                                      |                              |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. (jâ) хòху = <i>I wish, I will</i> | (mî) хòхемо = <i>we will</i> |
| 2. (tî) хòхеш                        | (vî) хòхете                  |
| 3. (òh) хòхе                         | (òhni) хòхе                  |
| (òna) хòхе                           | (òne) хòхе                   |
| (òno) хòхе                           | (òna) хòхѣ                   |

The shortened form which is used in the formation of *any* future consists of the second half of each of these words, viz. ху, хеш, хе, хемо, хете, хе, without accent.

The *first* form of the future of бѣти will therefore be :

jâ ху бѣти = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will be} \\ I \text{ shall be} \end{cases}$	mî хемо бѣти = <i>we shall be</i>
tî хеш бѣти = <i>thou wilt be</i>	vî хете бѣти = <i>you will be</i>
òh хе бѣти = <i>he will be</i>	òhni хе бѣти
òna хе бѣти = <i>she will be</i>	òne хе бѣти
òno хе бѣти = <i>it will be</i>	òna хе бѣти

} = *they will be*

The *second* form :

бѣху = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will be} \\ I \text{ shall be} \end{cases}$	бѣхемо = <i>we shall be</i>
бѣхеш = <i>thou wilt be</i>	бѣхете = <i>you will be</i>
бѣхе = <i>he (she, it) will be</i>	бѣхѣ = <i>they will be</i>

For the *negative* form of the present of *хтѣти* the *short* forms *only* are used, coupled with the negative particle, whether *хтѣти* is used as an independent verb or as an auxiliary, viz.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1. (jâ) нѣху = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will not} \\ I \text{ don't wish} \end{cases}$ | 1. (мѣ) нѣхемо   |
|   | 2. (вѣ) нѣхете   |
| 2. (тѣ) нѣхеш   |  |
| 3. (ѡн, ѡна, ѡно) нѣхе  | 3. $\begin{pmatrix} \text{ѡни} \\ \text{ѡне} \\ \text{ѡна} \end{pmatrix}$ нѣхѣ |

The negative future of *бѣти* is accordingly formed with *нѣху*, and has only the *one* form :

- |   |                  |
|---|------------------|
| 1. (jâ) нѣху бѣти = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will not be} \\ I \text{ shall not be} \end{cases}$ | (мѣ) нѣхемо бѣти |
| 2. (тѣ) нѣхеш бѣти  | (вѣ) нѣхете бѣти |
| 3. (ѡн) нѣхе бѣти   | (ѡни) нѣхе бѣти  |
| (ѡна) нѣхе бѣти   | (ѡне) нѣхе бѣти  |
| (ѡно) нѣхе бѣти   | (ѡна) нѣхѣ бѣти  |

The negative future of *any* verb is similarly formed.

The *interrogative* form of the present of *хтѣти* is formed thus :

хѡхеш ли (тѣ) ? = *dost thou wish ?*

хѡхете ли (вѣ) ? = *do you wish ?*

The interrogative future of *бѣти* is accordingly formed with this verb as follows, and *only* in the full form :

хѡхеш ли (тѣ) бѣти ? = *wilt thou be ?*

хѡхе ли (ѡн, ѡна, ѡно) бѣти ? = *will (he, she, it) be ?*

хѡхете ли (ви) бѣти ? = *will you be ?*

хѡхѣ ли (ѡни, ѡне, ѡна) бѣти ? = *will they be ?*

If the personal pronouns are retained they *must* be placed between the interrogative particle and the infinitive, as above.

Emphatic interrogations can be formed with зàр (cf. p. 33) and the short forms, e.g.

зàр ќе он бѝти ? = *do you mean to say that he will be ?*

зàр ќете вѝ бѝти ? = *do you mean to say that you will be ?*

Or with дà ли (cf. p. 33) and the short forms, e.g.

дà ли ќе (он, она, оно) бѝти ? = *will he be ?*

дà ли ќете (вѝ) бѝти ? = *will you be ?*

If negative interrogative forms are required, they are formed as follows :

неќете ли (вѝ) бѝти ? = *won't you be ?*

Or with зàр, cf. p. 34.

зàр неќе (он, она, оно) бѝти ? = *do you mean to say he won't be ?*

зàр неќете (вѝ) бѝти ? = *do you mean to say you won't be ?*

But such questions can also be asked in the form of an assumption by raising the voice, e.g.

вѝ ќете бѝти ? = *you will be ?*

The present forms of хтѝти are of course also frequently used in their literal meaning corresponding to the English verbs *to wish, to be willing, to want*. The personal pronouns are used only where special emphasis is laid on them.

Examples :

хòќу вòде, хлѝба, кàфе = *I want some water, bread, coffee.*

Used interrogatively :

хòќете ли вòде ? = *will you have some water ?*

хòќу, мòлим вас = *I will, please (lit. I beg you).*

хвàла, не (or неќу) = *thank you, no (I will not).*

The shortened forms are also used sometimes in their literal meaning, e.g.

кò ќе вòде ? = *who wants some water ?*    жà ќу = *I do (lit. I want).*

There is another form of the future, known as the *exact future*, which is used only in subordinate sentences. It is formed by means of the perfective present of бѣти (cf. p. 34) and the past participle active :

- |                        |                          |
|------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. бѹдѣм бѣо (бѣла f.) | 1. бѹдѣмо бѣли (бѣле f.) |
| 2. бѹдѣш бѣо (бѣла f.) | 2. бѹдѣте бѣли (бѣле f.) |
| 3. бѹдѣ бѣо            | 3. бѹдѹ бѣли             |
| бѹдѣ бѣла              | бѹдѹ бѣле                |
| бѹдѣ бѣло              | бѹдѹ бѣла                |

This tense is not frequently used in the case of the verb бѣти, because in conditional clauses the perfective present бѹдем is quite sufficient alone, e.g.

кад бѹдѣм у Лондону = *when I am* (lit. *shall be*) *in London.*

ако бѹдѣм у Лондону = *if I am* (lit. *shall be*) *in London.*

But in the case of all other verbs it is extremely common, e.g.

кад ог ако бѹдѣм дошао<sup>1</sup> у Лондон = *when or if I shall have come to London.*

## CHAPTER 12

### INTERROGATIVE AND RELATIVE PRONOUNS AND THE USE OF THE PRESENT, PAST, AND FUTURE OF *TO BE*

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>	
Sing.	кòјѣ	кòјā	кòјѣ	} = <i>who, which</i>
Pl.	кòјѣ	кòјѣ	кòјā	
Sing.	какав	каква	какво	
Pl.	какви	какве	каква	
	ог :			
Sing.	какѣ	какā	какò	
Pl.	какѣ	какѣ	какā	

<sup>1</sup> дошао, past part. of доћи = *to come, to arrive.*

Sing.	КОЛИКЀ	КОЛИКА	КОЛИКѠ	} = <i>how big</i>
Pl.	КОЛИКЀ	КОЛИКѐ	КОЛИКА	
Sing.	ЧИЈЀ (or ЧИЈ)	ЧИЈА	ЧИЈѐ	} = <i>whose</i>
Pl.	ЧИЈЀ	ЧИЈѐ	ЧИЈА	

кѠ = *who*, штā or штѠ = *what*: КОЛИКО. cf. p. 184

All these may be used as interrogative or relative, and also as indefinite pronouns.

They are declined as follows :

Only in the Sing.

Only in the Sing.

N.	кѠ	штā, штѠ
G.	кѠга	чѐга, штā
D.	кѠме or кѠму	чѐму
A.	кѠга	штā, штѠ
V.	—	—
I.	кѠм or кѠме <sup>1</sup>	чѠм or чѠме <sup>1</sup>
L.	кѠме or кѠм <sup>1</sup>	чѐму or чѐм

Sing.	N.	кѠјр	кѠјā	кѠјѐ
	G.	кѠјега	кѠјѐ	кѠјега
	D.	кѠјему	кѠјѠј	кѠјему
	A.	кѠјр or кѠјега <sup>2</sup>	кѠјѡ	кѠјѐ
	V.	—	—	—
	I.	кѠјѠм	кѠјѠм	кѠјѠм
Pl.	N.	кѠјр	кѠјѐ	кѠјā
	G.	кѠјѠх	кѠјѠх	кѠјѠх
	D.	кѠјѠм or кѠјѠма <sup>3</sup>	кѠјѠм or кѠјѠ- ма <sup>3</sup>	кѠјѠм or кѠјѠ- ма <sup>3</sup>
	A.	кѠјѐ	кѠјѐ	кѠјā
	V.	—	—	—

<sup>1</sup> Cf. notes 1 and 3 on p. 56.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. note 2 on p. 65.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. foot-note 1 on p. 78.

I.	кòјѣм ог кòјѣма <sup>1</sup>	кòјѣм ог кòјѣ-	кòјѣм ог кòјѣ-
		ма <sup>1</sup>	ма <sup>1</sup>
L.	кòјѣм ог кòјѣма <sup>1</sup>	кòјѣм ог кòјѣ-	кòјѣм ог кòјѣ-
		ма <sup>1</sup>	ма <sup>1</sup>

Чѣј—чѣјā—чѣјē is declined exactly like кòјѣ, and like the definite adjectives with a soft stem, cf. врѣћ, p. 65.

The pronoun кàкàв is declined exactly like the indefinite adjective, cf. жѣт, p. 64. The form кàкѣ and the pronoun колѣкѣ are declined like the definite adjective with a hard stem, cf. жѣтѣ, p. 65.

### Vocabulary

шѣма ( <i>f.</i> ) = wood, <sup>2</sup> forest	тòрба ( <i>f.</i> ) = handbag, knapsack
пѣт ( <i>m.</i> ) = road, way, (a) time (једàнпѣт = once)	ствàр ( <i>f.</i> ) = thing
имàње ( <i>n.</i> ) = property (land or fortune)	сèльàк ( <i>m.</i> ) = villager, peasant
пòзорѣште ( <i>n.</i> ) = theatre	дèчко ог дèчàк ( <i>m.</i> ) = boy
кòнцерт ( <i>m.</i> ) = concert	дèвòјка ( <i>f.</i> ) = girl
јàбука ( <i>f.</i> ) = apple	зàтвор ( <i>m.</i> ) = prison
шèшѣр ( <i>m.</i> ) = hat	рàт ( <i>m.</i> ) = war
ѣкѣс ( <i>m.</i> ) = taste	мѣр ( <i>m.</i> ) = peace
бòја ( <i>f.</i> ) = colour	пòдне ( <i>indeclinable</i> ) = noon (cf. p. 155)
	хвàла ( <i>f.</i> ) = thanks

ѣкѣсан ( <i>masc.</i> ), -сна ( <i>fem.</i> ), -сно ( <i>neut.</i> ) = nice (to taste)	сѣротан, -тна, -тно = poor (opp. to rich)
нèпослѣшан, -шна, -шно = disobedient	свѣлен, -èна, èно = silken
нèуредан, -дна, -дно = untidy	срèбрн, -рна, -рно = of silver
òпàсан, -сна, -сно = dangerous	

For the prepositions and adverbs cf. pp. 151, 179.

### Serbian Sentences

1. Јà ћу сѣтра бѣти кòд куће, а òн нèће. 2. Гдè ће òн бѣти?—Ў шуми. 3. Хòћете ли бѣти дàнàс прè пòдне ù цркви?—Хòћу (хòћемо). 4. Гдè ћете бѣти дàнàс

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note 3 on p. 56.

<sup>2</sup> wood, the material, is дрво.



после подне?—Бйћу (ог бйћемо) на рѣци. 5. Хòдете ли вечѣрас бйти у пòзорйшту?—Нѣћу (ог нѣћемо), бйћу (ог бйћемо) на кòнцерту. 6. Зàр ћете прѣксутра òпѣт бйти на рѣци?!—Хòћу (ог бйћу). 7. Зàр (òн, òна) нѣће бйти јўтрòс у цркви?!—Нѣће. 8. Хòдете ли вйна?—Нѣ, хвала. 9. Ви нѣћете јàбўкà?—Нѣ, хвала. 10. Ви нѣћете нйкад(а) бйти мòј прйјатељ! 11. Чйј(и) је òвàј (ог òво) шѣшйр?—Мòј. 12. Чйјà је òвà (ог òво) кўќа?—Нѣгова. 13. Чйје је òвò дѣте?—Нѣно. 14. Чйји су òвй (ог òво) капўти?—Нàши. 15. Чйје су òвѣ (ог òво) ствàри?—Вàше. 16. Чйја су òвà (ог òво) дѣца?—Нййхова. 17. Кàкав (ог кàкй) је вàш сàт?—Срѣбрн. 18. Кàква (ог кàкà) је бйла нѣна хàљина?—Свилѣна. 19. Кàкво (ог кàкò) је тò вйно?—Врло дòбро. 20. Колйкй је вàш сйн?—Вѣлики дѣчко (ог дѣчàк). 21. Колйкà је вàша ћѣрка?—Вѣлика дѣвòјка. 22. Колйкò је нѣгово имàње?—Врло мàло. 23. Кòлико сте пўта бйли у Лондòну?—Једàнпўт. 24. Кòјѣ је вàш брàт?—Òнò (је). 25. Кòјѣ је нѣгова сѣстра?—Òнò (је). 26. Кòјѣ је нѣно пѣрò?—Тò (је). 27. Кòјѣ су вàши кòњи?—Òвò (су). 28. Кòјѣ су нййхове књйге?—Òнò (су). 29. Шѣшйр, кòјй је на стòлици, нйје мòј. 30. Òнà гòспођа, кòјà је бйла близу вàс, нйје нѣгова мàјка. 31. Нѣгово дѣте, кòјѣ је ўвѣк нѣпòслўшно, бйће дàнàс у зàтвору. 32. Кò је òнàј чòвек?—Тò је вòјнйк кòјй је бйò у рàту. 33. Штà је тò?—Òвò су ствàри кòјѣ су бйле у нѣговој тòрби. 34. Љўди чйјà су имàња вѣлика нйсу сйротни. 35. Ђàци чйјѣ књйге нйсу чйсте, нѣуредни су. 36. Кàд сте бйли кòд куће?—Онòмад у подне. 37. Јѣ ли мòј брàт бйò кòд вàс јучѣ прѣ подне?—Нйје. 38. Зàр мòј òтац нйје бйò код нѣга сйноћ?!—Нйје. 39. Прѣкјуче сам бйò код òнога

сељака чија је кућа на брегу. 40. Прексиноћ нисмо били код куће.

#### Notes

5. на кòнцерту = *at the concert* (lit. *on*).

8. вина, Part. Gen. = *some wine*.

9. јабука, Part. Gen. Pl. = *some apples*.

11-16. The neuter forms òвò, тò, òнò of the demonstrative pronouns òвāј, тāј, òнāј may be used impersonally for all the genders.

37. код вāс = *at your home* (lit. *at you*).

38. код њèга = *at his home*, but с вāма = *with you*, с њāм = *with him*.

#### English Sentences

1. We shall not be at church to-morrow. 2. Where will she be to-day? 3. Will they be on the river to-morrow?—No, they will not. 4. The day after to-morrow we shall be in the theatre (= we shall go to). 5. Will you have some apples?—Yes, I will. 6. Whose coat is this?—It is mine. 7. Whose houses are those?—They are ours. 8. Of what sort (= of what colour *or* material) is his coat?—Woollen.<sup>1</sup> 9. How big is her son? 10. How many<sup>2</sup> times were you yesterday in the park? 11. Which is his book?—That is. 12. Which are their horses?—These are. 13. The child who was near you is her son. 14. These things were on my chair. 15. Those boys are not poor; their parents are well off. 16. My brother was not at home. 17. Was this boy not at home?—No, he was not. 18. We were not in the theatre the evening before last. 19. His son is an untidy boy. 20. What sort of church is that? 21. That is my handbag. 22. Whose things are those on the table?—They are mine. 23. After noon (= in the a.) we shall be at home. 24. Before noon (= in the morning) they were not at home. 25. What a pretty colour! 26. Of what colour are his eyes and his hair? 27. The taste of this dish is very pleasant. 28. This dish is very nice (to taste). 29. What large apples! whose are they?

<sup>1</sup> вўнен, from вўна (*f.*) = *wool*.

<sup>2</sup> кòлико (*adv.*).

CHAPTER 13

THE IMPERATIVE AND THE CONDITIONAL (AND THE AORIST) OF *TO BE*

1. *The Imperative.*

For this, and for all other verbs, special forms exist only for the 2nd pers. sing. and the 1st and 2nd pers. pl. For the 3rd pers. sing. and pl. a paraphrase is used, as in English, with the word *нѣка* = *let* :

Sing. 1. —	Pl. бѹдимо = <i>let us be</i>
2. бѹди = <i>be (thou)</i>	бѹдите = <i>be (you)</i>
3. нѣка бѹде = <i>let him,</i> <i>her, it, be</i>	нѣка бѹду = <i>let them be</i>

The negative is formed by prefixing to these forms *не*, e.g. *нѣбуди, нѣбудимо, нѣбудите.*

2. *The Conditional* of this, and of all other verbs, is formed by means of the past participle active (cf. pp. 59, 148), preceded by the *aorist*<sup>1</sup> of the verb *бѣти*. If the personal pronouns are retained the participle comes first ; if they are omitted it comes second. When the personal pronouns are retained the forms of the aorist are not accented.

The forms of the aorist of *бѣти* are :

Sing. 1. (jâ) бѣх	Pl. 1. (mî) бѣсмо
2. (tî) бѣ	2. (vî) бѣсте
3. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{òн} \\ \text{òна} \end{array} \right\} \text{бѣ}$	3. $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{òни} \\ \text{òне} \\ \text{òна} \end{array} \right\} \text{бѣше}$

<sup>1</sup> The aorist still exists in Serbian, as well as the imperfect, but these tenses, though very much used in literature, are rare in conversation ; the aorist corresponds to the French *passé défini*, and cf. p. 187.

When these forms are used for the conditional the 3rd pers. plur. бѣше changes into бѣ. Even in the 1st and 2nd pers. plur. this shortened form бѣ is most frequently used instead of бѣсмо and бѣсте. The conditional of бѣти therefore is as follows :

- Sing. 1. ја бѣх бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла) бѣх = *I should be, or I should have been*
2. тѣ бѣ бѣо (бѣла f.) ,, бѣо (бѣла) бѣ
3. { ѡн бѣ бѣо бѣо бѣ  
 ѡна бѣ бѣла ,, бѣла бѣ  
 ѡно бѣ бѣло бѣло бѣ
- Pl. 1. мѣ бѣ бѣли (бѣле f.) or бѣли (бѣле) бѣ
2. вѣ бѣ бѣли (бѣле f.) ,, бѣли (бѣле) бѣ
- { ѡни бѣ бѣли бѣли бѣ  
 ѡне бѣ бѣле ,, бѣле бѣ  
 ѡна бѣ бѣла бѣла бѣ

The negative is formed by putting the negative particle не before the auxiliary verb, e.g.

1. ја не бѣх бѣо or не бѣх бѣо = *I should not be, or I should not have been*
2. вѣ не бѣ бѣли ,, не бѣ бѣли

The interrogative of the conditional of бѣти is most frequently used with да ли, e.g.

- да ли бѣ (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле f.) = *would you be ? or would you have been ?*
- да ли бѣ (ѡни, ѡне . . .) бѣли (бѣле f.) = *would they (f.) be (or have been) ?*

Also very often with зàр, e.g.

- зàр бѣ (вѣ) бѣли ? = *would you be (or have been) ?*
- зàр бѣ (ѡн) бѣо . . . ? = *would he be (or have been) ?*

Or in the negative-interrogative form :

- зàр не бѣ бѣла . . . ? = *would she not be ? or would not she have been ?*

зѣр нѣ би (ѡни) бѣли . . . ? = *would they, &c.*

Such forms as

бѣ ли (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле *f.*) . . . ?      бѣ ли (ѡни) бѣли . . . ?  
sound bad and are not used.

The English phrase *Would it be better* is translated thus :  
дѣ ли би бѣло бѣле ? *Would it be possible* = дѣ ли би бѣло  
могѣно (or могѣе) ?

As will have been evident from the examples already given, there is no difference between the future conditional and the past conditional in Serbian,<sup>1</sup> e.g.

Јѣ бих вѡлео (or вѡлела) = *I should like* or *I should have liked.*

At the same time in a subordinate clause following such a sentence a difference can be made between the past and the future by the use of different conjunctions, as follows :

1. *I should be glad* (lit. *I should like*) *if you could do this* =  
Јѣ бих вѡлео кѣд (or ѣко) би вѣ ѡво могли урѣдити.

2. *I should have been glad* (lit. *I should have liked*) *if you could have done this* = Јѣ бих вѡлео дѣ сте (вѣ) ѡво могли урѣдити.

3. *I should go to London to-morrow if I were able* = Ышао бих сѣтра у Лондон кѣд (or ѣко) бих могао (могла).

4. *I should have gone to London yesterday if I had been able* = Ышао бих јѣчѣ у Лондон дѣ сам могао.

That is to say, a past conditional *clause* is rendered by дѣ with the ordinary past tense, while a future conditional *clause* is rendered by кѣд or ѣко with the conditional; in the principal sentence in each case the conditional is used.

<sup>1</sup> Forms such as *jȃ* бих бѣо вѡлео, &c., are obsolete.

## CHAPTER 14

THE COMPARATIVE AND SUPERLATIVE OF  
ADJECTIVES

THE **Comparative** is formed by adding the following endings to the stem of the adjectives :

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
1. Sing.	-jī	-jā	-jē
Pl.	-jī	-jē	-jā
	or :		
2. Sing.	-шī	-шā	-шē
Pl.	-шī	-шē	-шā
	or :		
3. Sing.	-иjī	-иjā	-иjē
Pl.	-иjī	-иjē	-иjā

1. The following adjectives form the comparative by means of the first group of endings, of which the letter *j* coalesces with the last consonant of the adjectival stem (cf. p. 18, IV):

бѣо<sup>1</sup> = *white*, comp. бѣльī (*m.*), бѣльā (*f.*), бѣльē (*n.*).

бѣсан = *mad, furious* : бѣшьī (*m.*), бѣшьā (*f.*), бѣшьē (*n.*).

блāг = *mild* : блāжī (*m.*), блāжā (*f.*), блāжē (*n.*).

блѣд = *pale* : блѣђī (*m.*), блѣђā (*f.*), блѣђē (*n.*).

бръз = *quick* : бръжī (*m.*), бръжā (*f.*), бръжē (*n.*).

врѹћ = *hot* : врѹћī<sup>2</sup> (*m.*), врѹћā<sup>2</sup> (*f.*), врѹћē<sup>2</sup> (*n.*).

глѹв = *deaf* : глѹвльī (*m.*), глѹвльā (*f.*), глѹвльē (*n.*).

гѡрак (stem : горк-) = *bitter* : гѡрчī (*m.*), гѡрчā (*f.*), гѡрчē (*n.*).

<sup>1</sup> Originally бел, cf. p. 16.

<sup>2</sup> More commonly тѡплиjи, comp. of тѡпао = *warm*, and ярѣлиjй, comp. of врѣо = *hot*.

- грѹб = *rough*<sup>1</sup> : грѹбѣи (m.), грѹбѣа (f.), грѹбѣе (n.).  
 гѹст = *thick*,<sup>2</sup> *dense* : гѹстѣи (m.), гѹстѣа (f.), гѹстѣе (n.).  
 драг = *dear* (not of price) : дражѣи (m.), дражѣа (f.),  
 дражѣе (n.).  
 дѹг = *long* : дѹжѣи (m.), дѹжѣа (f.), дѹжѣе (n.).  
 жѣв = *alive, lively* : жѣвѣи (m.), жѣвѣа (f.), жѣвѣе (n.).  
 жѹт = *yellow* : жѹтѣи (m.), жѹтѣа (f.), жѹтѣе (n.).  
 јак = *strong*<sup>1</sup> : јачѣи (m.), јачѣа (f.), јачѣе (n.).  
 крѣв = *crooked, wrong, guilty* : крѣвѣи (m.), крѣвѣа (f.),  
 крѣвѣе (n.).  
 крѣнь = *chirped* : крѣнѣи (m.), крѣнѣа (f.), крѣнѣе (n.).  
 крѹт = *stiff, rigid* : крѹтѣи (m.), крѹтѣа (f.), крѹтѣе (n.).  
 лѣсан = *easy* : лѣшнѣи (m.), лѣшнѣа (f.), лѣшнѣе (n.).  
 лѹд = *mad, stupid* : лѹтѣи (m.), лѹтѣа (f.), лѹтѣе (n.).  
 льѹт = *angry, strong or hot* (of food) : льѹтѣи (m.), льѹтѣа (f.),  
 льѹтѣе (n.).  
 млѣд = *young* : млѣтѣи (m.), млѣтѣа (f.), млѣтѣе (n.).  
 плѣв = *blue*<sup>3</sup> (also *fair* of hair) : плѣвѣи (m.), плѣвѣа (f.),  
 плѣвѣе (n.).  
 прѣк(ѣ) = *short* (of distance, of temper) : прѣчѣи (m.), прѣчѣа  
 (f.), прѣчѣе (n.).  
 рѣтѣ = *red-haired* : рѣтѣи (m.), рѣтѣа (f.), рѣтѣе (n.).  
 сѣд = *grey-haired* : сѣтѣи (m.), сѣтѣа (f.), сѣтѣе (n.).  
 скѹп = *dear* (only of price) : скѹпѣи (m.), скѹпѣа (f.),  
 скѹпѣе (n.).  
 сѹв or сѹх = *dry*<sup>4</sup> : сѹвѣи (m.), сѹвѣа (f.), сѹвѣе (n.).  
 тврѣд = *hard* : тврѣтѣи (m.), тврѣтѣа (f.), тврѣтѣе (n.).  
 тѣсан = *tight* : тѣшнѣи (m.), тѣшнѣа (f.), тѣшнѣе (n.).  
 тѣх = *quiet, calm* : тѣшѣи (m.), тѣшѣа (f.), тѣшѣе (n.).

<sup>1</sup> Literally and figuratively.<sup>2</sup> Of liquids, also of hair.<sup>3</sup> Other words for *blue* are сѣнѣи (= *dark blue*) and, especially of the sea, мѣдар.<sup>4</sup> *Wet* is мѣкар.

тўп = *blunt* (also *stupid*) : тўпльи (m.), тўпльā (f.), тўпльē (n.).

хўд = *poor, thin, miserable* : хўћи (m.), хўћā (f.), хўћē (n.).

црн = *black, dark* (of eyes or hair) : црњи (m.), црњā (f.), црњē (n.).

чврст = *firm* : чврстћи (m.), чврстћā (f.), чврстћē (n.).

чѐст = *frequent* (*dense*, of trees) : чѐстћи (m.), чѐстћā (f.), чѐстћē (n.).

Besides these, a certain number of adjectives ending in -ак, -ек, -ок, and also the adjectives грдан = *ugly*, дѐбео = *thick, fat* (orig. дѐбел), and шўпаль = *hollow*, also form the comparative by means of the above-mentioned endings, which are added directly to the stem after the suffixes -ак, -ек, -ок, -ан, -ел (ео), and -аль have been dropped, e.g.

внсок = *high, tall* : внши (m.), вншā (f.), вншē (n.).

гладак = *smooth* : гладћи (m.), гладћā (f.), гладћē (n.).

грдан = *ugly* : грћи (m.), грћā (f.), грћē (n.).

дāлек = *far* : дāльи (m.), дāльā (f.), дāльē (n.).

дѐбео = *fat, thick*<sup>1</sup> : дѐбльи (m.), дѐбльā (f.), дѐбльē (n.).

дўбок = *deep* : дўбљи (m.), дўбљā (f.), дўбљē (n.).

дугачак = *long* (of things) : дўжи (m.), дўжā (f.), дўжē (n.).

кратак = *short* : краћи (m.), краћā (f.), краћē (n.).

низак = *low* : нижи (m.), нижā (f.), нижē (n.).

плитак = *shallow* : плйћи (m.), плйћā (f.), плйћē (n.).

сладак = *sweet* : слаћи (m.), слаћā (f.), слаћē (n.).

ўзак = *narrow* : ўжи (m.), ўжā (f.), ўжē (n.).

широк = *broad, wide* : шйри (m.), шйрā (f.), шйрē (n.).

шўпаль = *hollow* : шўпљи (m.), шўпљā (f.), шўпљē (n.).

тѐжак = *heavy, difficult* : тѐжи (m.), тѐжā (f.), тѐжē (n.).

2. Only the following four adjectives form the comparative with the second group of endings :

<sup>1</sup> Of solid things.



лѣк = *easy, light* : лѣкшї̄ (*m.*), лѣкшѣ (*f.*), лѣкшѣ (*n.*).

лѣп = *beautiful, pretty* : лѣпшї̄ (*m.*), лѣпшѣ (*f.*), лѣпшѣ (*n.*).

мѣк = *soft, fine* : мѣкшї̄ (*m.*), мѣкшѣ (*f.*), мѣкшѣ (*n.*).

млѣк = *tepid* : млѣкшї̄<sup>1</sup> (*m.*), млѣкшѣ (*f.*), млѣкшѣ (*n.*).

3. All the other adjectives form the comparative with the third group of endings, by adding them to the stem, e.g.

стѣр = *old* : стѣрнї̄ (*m.*), стѣрнѣ (*f.*), стѣрнѣ (*n.*).

јѣфтн <sup>2</sup> = *cheap* : јѣфтннї̄ (*m.*), јѣфтннѣ (*f.*), јѣфтннѣ (*n.*).

зѣдовѣлан = *content* : зѣдовѣлннї̄ (*m.*), зѣдовѣлннѣ (*f.*), зѣдовѣлннѣ (*n.*).

јѣнѣчан = *courageous* : јѣнѣчннї̄ (*m.*), јѣнѣчннѣ (*f.*), јѣнѣчннѣ (*n.*).

тѣпао = *warm* : тѣплннї̄ (*m.*), тѣплннѣ (*f.*), тѣплннѣ (*n.*).

Cf. the phonetic rules, pp. 17 ff.

The **Superlative** is formed by adding the prefix нѣј- to the comparative, e.g.

нѣјдражї̄ = *dearest* (cf. p. 85).

нѣјлѣпшї̄ = *most beautiful*.

нѣјдубльї̄ = *deepest*.

нѣјстаринї̄ = *oldest*.

Some adjectives have no positive degree, but only the comparative and superlative, e.g.

гѣрнѣ̄ = *upper*.

дѣнѣ̄<sup>3</sup> = *lower*.

пѣрвѣ̄ = *first*.

пѣследнѣ̄ = *last*.

пѣднѣ̄ = *front*.

стрѣжнѣ̄ (or зѣднѣ̄) = *hind, back*.

<sup>1</sup> The form млѣчї̄ is also found.

<sup>2</sup> From the Greek εἰτίμος.

<sup>3</sup> Originally долѣн.

The comparative and superlative of some adjectives are formed from quite different stems, as in other languages, e.g.

дѡбар ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>good</i> , бѡльшї = <i>better</i> , нѡјболшї = <i>best</i> .		
{ зѡо ( <i>m.</i> ) = <i>bad</i> , гѡршї = <i>worse</i> , нѡјгоршї = <i>worst</i> .	злѡ ( <i>f.</i> )	гѡрѡ
	злѡ ( <i>n.</i> )	гѡрѣ
вѣлїки = <i>big</i>	вѣшї	нѡјвѣшї
мѡли = <i>little</i>	мѡшї	нѡјмѡшї

The declension of the comparative and superlative adjectives follows that of the definite adjectives, but in the gen. dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut. they have the endings -егѡ, -егу, because their stems always end in *j* or *ш*.

Comparison is expressed by нѣго or ѡд, cf. p. 89.

N.B. The verb вѡлети (pres. вѡлїм, cf. pp. 145, 149) = *to like*, has comparative and superlative forms, viz. вѡлїжїти (pres. вѡлїжїм) = *to prefer*, for which also вшїшѣ вѡлети is used, and нѡјвѡлети (pres. нѡјвѡлїм) = *to like best of all*.

## CHAPTER 15

### EXERCISE ON THE TWO PREVIOUS CHAPTERS

#### Vocabulary

инжїнѣр (*m.*) = *engineer*  
 слўга (*m.*) = *man-servant*  
 пѡложѡжї (*m.*) = *position*  
 вѣчѣ (*n.*) = *evening*  
 мѣсто (*n.*) = *place*  
 жївѡт (*m.*) = *life*

дрўштѡ (*n.*) = *society*  
 нѣволя (*f.*) = *misery*  
 вѡрош (*f.*) = *town, city*  
 град (*m.*) = *city, fortress*  
 стѡн (*m.*) = *apartment, flat*

Sing. дѡбар (*m.*), дѡбра (*f.*), дѡбро (*n.*) }  
 Pl. дѡбри (*m.*), дѡбре (*f.*), дѡбра (*n.*) } = *good*  
 бѡльшї, бѡльѡ, бѡльѣ = *better*  
 пѡслўшѡн, -шнѡ, -шнѡ = *obe-*  
*dient*

нздржљив, -ивѡ, -иво = *dur-*  
*able, hardy*  
 гѡрд, -ѡ, -ѡ = *proud, arrogant*

празан, -зна, -зно = *empty*  
 раван, -вна, -вно = *even, level*  
 љубазан, -зна, -зно = *kind, amiable*  
 миран, -рна, -рно = *quiet, peaceful*  
 срећан, -ћна, -ћно = *happy, fortunate*<sup>1</sup>  
 задовѡлан, -љна, -љно = *content, pleased*  
 пријатан, -тна, -тно = *agreeable, pleasant*  
 мјузикалан, -лна, -лно = *musical*

корисан,<sup>2</sup> -сна, -сно = *useful, profitable*  
 висока, -а, -о = *high, tall*  
 скуп, скупа, -по = *dear, expensive*  
 жив, жива, -во = *alive, lively*  
 туп, тупа, -по = *blunt*<sup>3</sup>  
 тесан, тесна, -сно = *tight*  
 тих, тиха, -хо = *calm*  
 брз, брза, -зо = *quick*  
 сѣд, сѣда, -до = *grey-haired*  
 густ, густа, -то = *dense, thick*  
 дубок, дубока, -ко = *deep*

For the prepositions and adverbs, cf. pp. 151, 179.

Comparison is expressed either by него = *than*, or by од (cf. p. 89) = *from*; in the first case the thing compared is in the nom., in the second in the gen.

### Reading Exercises

1. Буди добар и послушан. 2. Да ли би ваше дете било боље и послушније кад<sup>4</sup> би било у школи?—Било би.<sup>5</sup>  
 3. Будимо издржљиви у невољи. 4. Да ли би ви били горди кад би били врло богати?—Не бих. 5. Будите љубазни према својим елугама. 6. Нека буде код својѣ кѹће сѹтра ѹвече. 7. Нека буду мирни на својим местима. 8. Био бих много срећнији и задовѡљнији кад би(х) био у вашѣм подложажу (or usually : . . . да сам у вашѣм подложажу). 9. Било би нам вѣдма пријатно да смо били у вашѣм друштву. 10. Да сам (or кад би(х) била) мјузикална, била бих потпуно срећна. 11. Да ли би било корисније за њѣга кад би био инжињѣр?—Би

<sup>1</sup> *unhappy, unfortunate*, is несрећан.

<sup>2</sup> Also користан.

<sup>4</sup> кад or када = *if*.

<sup>3</sup> *sharp* is оштар.

<sup>5</sup> Or simply : би.

(ог било би). 12. Зар би њихов живот био мирнији кад не би били заједно?—Био би. 13. Зар она не би била задовољнија у својој кући?—Не би. 14. Њаша вáрош била би лепша кад(а) би била поред реке. 15. Мој старији браћ је већи (ог виши) од мене (ог . . . него ја). 16. Његово одело је скупље од мого. 17. Најбогатији (св. људи) нису најсрећнији. 18. Најбоље је да будемо добри пријатељи. 19. Лети је живот пријатнији у селу него у вáроши. 20. Њаш стáн је у најживљој улици наше вáроши. 21. Ваш нож је много тупљи од мого. 22. Његов капут је сүвише тесан за мене. 23. На овоме месту река је најтиша. 24. Њена кóса је много црња него мóја. 25. Ваши коњи су бржи него мóји ; они су најбржи у нашем граду. 26. Кóса (у) мòје мајке је сећа него кóса (у) мого оца. 27. У нашем дворишту трава је гушћа него у вашем. 28. Овај бунáр је дубљи него тај. 29. Кò је виши, ви или ваш браћ?—Ја. 30. Чије су очи црње, његове или њене?—Њене.

### English Sentences

1. Do not be proud. 2. Be happy and content. 3. Would he be more obedient in school?—Yes, he would. 4. Are they kind to their men-servants? 5. We should be very glad to be with you. 6. Would she be happier at her home? 7. Would it not be more useful for them to be engineers? 8. We should be happier if we were in his position. 9. My brother is taller than his. 10. Her flat is more expensive than ours. 11. The happiest people are not the richest. 12. It would be better for them to be friends. 13. This street is very quiet. 14. That knife is blunt. 15. Her coat is not tight. 16. Are her horses quicker than yours? 17. Is her hair grey?—No, it is still dark. 18. This well is not deep. 19. Whose eyes are darker, hers or mine? 20. Whose knife is this? It is very sharp. 21. The river is not rapid at this place. 22. This

mountain is higher than that. It is the highest. 23. Beside the river is a thick wood. 24. His hair is thicker and longer than mine. 25. This street is broader than that. 26. This book is thinner and dearer than that. 27. Those books are thicker and cheaper than these. 28. Your church is older and more beautiful than ours. 29. In our town living is dearer than in your village. 30. His suit of clothes is more durable than mine. 31. We were in very pleasant society yesterday.

## CHAPTER 16

### THE IMPERFECT AND PLUPERFECT OF *TO BE*

#### 1. THE IMPERFECT

THIS tense, like the aorist (cf. p. 81), is much used in literature, but not often in conversation. It is also used as the auxiliary verb to form the *pluperfect*. In conversation both the aorist and the imperfect are almost always replaced by the (compound) past tense (cf. p. 59 f.).

The imperfect of бѣти is :

- |                          |                      |                         |
|--------------------------|----------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. (jâ) бѣjax            | or бѣх, <i>I was</i> | (мѣ) (бѣjасмо) or бѣсмо |
| 2. (тѣ) (бѣjаше) ,, бѣше |                      | (вѣ) (бѣjасте) ,, бѣсте |
| 3. { (ѡн)                |                      | { (ѡни)                 |
| (ѡна) (бѣjаше) ,, бѣше   |                      | (ѡне) (бѣjaxy) ,, бѣxy  |
| (ѡно)                    |                      | (ѡна)                   |

The forms in brackets are less frequent.

The interrogative, negative, and negative-interrogative forms are formed in the same manner as those of the present.

2. The PLUPERFECT of бѣти is jâ бѣjax бѣо, &c., but it is very seldom used.

## CHAPTER 17

## THE NUMERALS

There are (1) Cardinal, (2) Ordinal, and (3) Collective numerals.

## 1. Cardinal Numerals

- |  |           |
|--|-----------|
| 1. jèдан ( <i>m.</i> ), jèдна ( <i>f.</i> ), jèдно ( <i>n.</i> ) | 6. шèст   |
| 2. двâ ( <i>m.</i> ), двê ( <i>f.</i> ), двâ ( <i>n.</i> )       | 7. сèдам  |
| 3. трî   | 8. òсам   |
| 4. чèтири  | 9. дèвèт  |
| 5. пèт   | 10. дèсèт |

The numbers between 11 and 19 are formed by prefixing the numbers from 1 to 9 to the number дèсèт, inserting between them the preposition на = *on to*, whereupon, owing to contraction, the following forms are obtained :

- |                |                           |
|----------------|---------------------------|
| 11. jèдàнаест  | 16. шèснаест              |
| 12. двâнаест   | 17. сèдàмнаест            |
| 13. трîнаест   | 18. осàмнаест             |
| 14. чètр̀наест | 19. дèвèтнаест            |
| 15. пèтнаест   | 20. двáдесèт <sup>1</sup> |

The numbers 20, 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, and 90 are formed by a combination of the numbers 1–9 with 10. The numbers between these are formed as follows :

- |                                    |                            |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 21. двáдесет <sup>2</sup> и jèдан  | 27. двáдесет и сèдам       |
| 22. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> двâ    | 28. двáдесет и òсам        |
| 23. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> трî    | 29. двáдесет и дèвèт       |
| 24. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> чèтири | 30. трíдесет <sup>2</sup>  |
| 25. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> пèт    | 40. чètрдèсèт <sup>2</sup> |
| 26. двáдесет и <sup>3</sup> шèст   | 50. педèсèт                |

<sup>1</sup> Pronounced quickly, двàес.

<sup>2</sup> Pronounced quickly, двàест, тр̀нест, чètр̀рест.

<sup>3</sup> Often pronounced with an accent on the и.

60. шездѣсѣт <sup>1</sup>	400. чѣтири стѣтине
70. седамдѣсѣт	500. пѣт стѣтїнѧ <sup>3</sup>
80. осамдѣсѣт	600. шѣст стѣтїнѧ
90. деведѣсѣт	700. сѣдам стѣтїнѧ
100. стѣ ог стѣтина	800. ѳсам стѣтїнѧ
101. сто јѣдан, &c.	900. дѣвѣт стѣтїнѧ
200. двѣста ог две стѣтине <sup>2</sup>	1000. хїљада ог тїсуѣа
300. трїста ог три стѣтине	2000. двѣ хїљаде, &c.

Only the numbers јѣдан, двѧ, трї, чѣтири, стѣтина, and хїљада (or тїсуѣа) are declined. The last three are declined like feminine substantives, cf. жѣна, p. 47. The number јѣдан is declined like the pronoun ѳвѧј, cf. p. 56. It varies according to gender as follows : јѣдан (*m.*), јѣдна (*f.*), јѣдно (*n.*).

Двѧ (*m.*), двѣ (*f.*), двѧ (*n.*) is declined as follows :

Nom. двѧ ( <i>m., n.</i> )	двѣ ( <i>f.</i> )	Acc. двѧ ( <i>m., n.</i> )	двѣ ( <i>f.</i> )
Gen. двѧју	двѣју	Inst. двѧма	двѣма
Dat. двѧма	двѣма	Loc. двѧма	двѣма

In the same way are declined the two following words :

ѳба ( <i>m., n.</i> ), ѳбе ( <i>f.</i> )	} = both.
ѳбадвѧ ( <i>m., n.</i> ), ѳбадвѣ ( <i>f.</i> )	

The numbers трї and чѣтири are declined as follows :

Nom. Acc. трї (*m., f., n.*), чѣтири (*m., f., n.*)

Gen. трїју (*m., f., n.*), чѣтїрју (*m., f., n.*)

Dat., Instr., Loc. трїма (*m., f., n.*), чѣтїрма (*m., f., n.*)

If the numbers двѧ, ѳба, ѳбадвѧ, трї, and чѣтири follow a preposition they are not usually declined, e.g. у двѧ (or трї) сѧта = *at two o'clock*, с чѣтири књїге = *with four books*, cf. p. 155.

The number јѣдан, -а, -о, is very often used with an

<sup>1</sup> Pronounced quickly, шѣсѣт.

<sup>2</sup> This is *gen. sing.*, cf. p. 97.

<sup>3</sup> This is *gen. pl.*, cf. p. 97.

indefinite meaning, corresponding to the English indefinite article, e.g.

јѣдан чòвек = *a man*.

јѣдна жѣна = *a woman*.

јѣдно дѣте = *a child*.

N.B. *One of* is rendered as follows : јѣдан од вѣс = *one of you*, but јѣдан мòј прѣјатељ = *one of my friends*.

## 2. Ordinal Numerals

These are really adjectives used in the definite forms and are declined like them. From 5 to 99 they are formed by adding -и to the cardinal numerals. The numbers 1-4, 100, 1000, are different, e.g.

- |                                 |                          |
|---------------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. прѣвѣи = <i>first</i>        | 19. девѣтнаестѣи         |
| 2. дрѣгѣи = <i>second</i> , &c. | 20. двѣдесѣтѣи           |
| 3. трѣкѣи                       | 21. двѣдесет прѣвѣи, &c. |
| 4. четѣртѣи                     | 30. трѣдесѣтѣи           |
| 5. пѣтѣи                        | 40. четѣрдесѣтѣи         |
| 6. шѣстѣи                       | 50. педѣсѣтѣи            |
| 7. сѣдмѣи                       | 60. шездѣсѣтѣи           |
| 8. òсмѣи                        | 70. седамдѣсѣтѣи         |
| 9. дѣвѣтѣи                      | 80. осамдѣсѣтѣи          |
| 10. дѣсѣтѣи                     | 90. деведѣсѣтѣи          |
| 11. јѣдѣнаестѣи                 | 100. стòтѣи              |
| 12. двѣнаестѣи                  | 200. двѣстòтѣи           |
| 13. трѣнаестѣи                  | 300. трѣстòтѣи           |
| 14. четѣрнаестѣи                | 400. четѣристòтѣи        |
| 15. пѣтнаестѣи                  | 500. пѣтстòтѣи, &c.      |
| 16. шѣснаестѣи                  | 1000. хѣладѣтѣи          |
| 17. седѣмнаестѣи                | 1001. хѣладу прѣвѣи      |
| 18. осѣмнаестѣи                 | 2000. двѣхѣладѣтѣи, &c.  |



## 3. Collective Numerals

These are used only in the plural for all genders, and in the neuter singular.

<i>Pl. Masc. Fem. Neut.</i>	<i>Neut. sing.</i>
2. двѡји, двѡје, двѡја	двѡје, ѡбоје
3. трѡји, &c.	трѡје
4. чѣтвори	чѣворо
5. пѣтори	пѣторо
6. шѣстори	шѣсторо
7. сѣдмори	сѣдморо
8. ѡсмори	ѡсморо
9. дѣветори	дѣветоро
10. дѣсетори, &c.	дѣсеторо, &c.

The plural collectives are used with such substantives as are only used in the plural (cf. p. 30) or as pairs, e.g.

двѡји вѡлови = 2 *pairs*<sup>1</sup> of *oxen*.

трѡје чарапе = 3 *pairs of stockings*.

чѣворе нѡвине = 4 *newspapers*.

чѣвора кѡла = 4 *carriages*

(кѡло, or more usually тѡчак = *wheel*,<sup>2</sup> чѣтири кѡла, or тѡчка = 4 *wheels*; тѡчак also = *a bicycle*).

These are declined like the plural of мѡј.

The neut. sing. collectives are used especially when numbers of living things of mixed genders are indicated. They require the genitive, e.g. бѡло нас је трѡје у врту а двѡје у кући = *there were three of us (men and women) in the garden and two in the house*. When people, both men and women, are indicated, the word љѡди<sup>3</sup> (cf. pp. 30, 48) is

<sup>1</sup> A pair is also пѡр.

<sup>2</sup> Is also the name of the national Serbian dance.

<sup>3</sup> Pl. N. V. љѡди, G. љѡдѡ, D. I. L. љѡдима, A. љѡде.

usually replaced by њих or њѣх (=of them), e.g. тãмо их је чѣтворо or њѣх је тãмо чѣтворо = *there are four people there*; чѣтворо љўди by itself = *four people*. They are also used frequently with collective nouns (cf. p. 57), which are then put in the genitive, e.g. двòје дѣце (gen. of дѣца) = *a couple of children*, though one can also say двã дѣтета (gen. of дѣте); трòје пѣлãди (gen. of пѣлãд) = *three chickens*, but one can also say трѣ пѣлета (gen. of пѣле). One says пѣторо брãке (gen. of брãка, cf. p. 47) = *five brothers*, but двã, трѣ, чѣтири брãта (gen. of брãт, cf. p. 44) = 2, 3, 4 *brothers*. One says двã, трѣ, чѣтири чòвека = 2, 3, 4 *men*, but пѣт, шѣст, &c., љўди = 5, 6, &c., *men*. Feminine nouns are always preceded by cardinal numerals, e.g. двѣ жѣне (cf. p. 47) = *two women*, трѣ сѣстре = *three sisters*.

These neut. sing. collectives are declined as follows :

Nom. Acc. двòје, трòје, чѣтворо.

Gen. двòга, трòга, четвòрга.

Dat. Inst. Loc. двòма, трò(ј)ма, четвòрма.

All the collective numbers ending in -opo are declined like чѣтворо.

All these collectives are seldom used except in the nom. and acc., and after prepositions usually remain in the nom.

4. From the collective numerals are derived feminine substantives ending in -ица, which have the functions of *numerals* and are used only of *men*, e.g.

двòјица = *two men*                      четвòрица

обòјица = *both men*                      петòрица

трòјица    шестòрица, &c.

One can also say двã човѣка, but one *only* says двã брãта, трѣ војни́ка, when category is specified.

5. The distributive numerals are formed by putting the preposition по before the cardinal numerals, e.g.

пò јèдан = <i>at the rate of</i> <i>one, or one each</i>	пò чèтири
пò двâ	пò дèсет
пò трѣ	пò стò
	пò хильаду

6. Multiplicative numerals are formed also from the cardinal numerals by putting after them the noun пѹт = *way, road, a time*, e.g.

јèданпѹт = *once*, or јèдан пѹт.

двâпѹт = *twice*, or двâ пѹта.

трѣпѹт = *three times*, or трѣ пѹта.

чèтири пѹт = *four times*, or чèтири пѹта, &c.

### 7. Fractional numerals :

$\frac{1}{2}$ = (јèдна) полòвина	$\frac{1}{10}$ = (јèдна) десèтина
$\frac{1}{3}$ = (јèдна) трèћина	$1\frac{1}{2}$ = јèдан њ пò
$\frac{1}{4}$ = (јèдна) четвèртина	$3\frac{1}{2}$ = трѣ њ пò
$\frac{1}{5}$ = (јèдна) пèтина	$10\frac{1}{2}$ = дèсèт њ пò

### Notes

After all the numbers from 5–20 inclusive, from 25–30 inclusive, &c., the gen. pl. is used ; after the numbers 2, 3, 4, 22, 23, 24, 32, 33, 34, &c., the gen. sing.,<sup>1</sup> e.g.

пèт књѣгâ = 5 *books*.

двè књѣге = 2 *books*.

дèсèт дèвојâкâ = 10 *girls*.

After all such numbers as 21, 31, 41, &c., the substantive is in the nom. sing., e.g. двâдесет и јèдна гòдина = 21 *years*.

трѣ дèвòјке = 3 *girls*.

трѣ дèтета = 3 *children*

(or : трòје дèцè = 'a 3 of children').

<sup>1</sup> This is really the old Dual Number whose use became extended to the numbers 3 and 4.

When an adjective comes between the numerals 2, 3, 4, &c., and the noun, it is put in the gen. sing. of the indefinite form, e.g. двâ главно̄а гра̀да or двѣ главно̄ѣ в̀ароши = *the two principal towns*; after 5, &c., in the gen. pl., e.g. пѣт главно̄их сѣла̄ = *the five chief villages*; these remain unchanged after prepositions, e.g. сã двѣ (or ѓбе) свѣ̀је р̀уке = *with one's two hands*.

The phrase *What is the date to-day?* is translated: Кòд̄ӣ је (sc. д́атум) д̀анас?

The phrase *What is the day of the week?* is translated: Кòд̄ӣ је д̀ан д̀анас?

In expressing the date only the last of each series of numbers is an ordinal number, e.g.

д̀анас је т́ридесет п̀рв̄ӣ (sc. д̀ан) јãнуãр х̀иљаду дѣвѣт стòт̄ӣна̄ седãмнаесте гòд̄ине = *to-day is the 31st (of) January 1917*; it is to be noticed that in such phrases the *month* is in the nominative, *thousand* is in the accusative,<sup>1</sup> 9 is in the nominative, 100 is in the genitive after 9 (cf. p. 97), and 17 is in the genitive singular, as is also *year*, i.e. *of the seventeenth year*.

In such phrases as *on the 31st . . .* the genitive is used without any preposition, e.g.

Кãд сте рòђени? = *When were you born?*

Др̀угогã фѣбруара х̀иљаду ѓсам стòт̄ӣна̄ деведѣсѣт трѣ̀ћ̄ гòд̄ине = *On the 2nd of February 1893*.

The time of day is expressed as follows:

Кòлико је сãти <sup>2</sup>? = *What time is it?* (lit. *how many is it*

<sup>1</sup> The reason is not clear, but стòт̄ина̄ and х̀иљада are often put in the *acc.* when another case would be expected; it is a sort of indeclinable form and can be governed by a preposition, e.g. у х̀иљаду ѓсам стòт̄ина̄ деведѣсѣт дѣвѣтòј гòдинӣ = *in the year 1899 (loc. after y)*.

<sup>2</sup> Irregular gen. pl. of сãт, originally сãхат (a Turkish word).

of hours?). Answers: *jèdan cāt* = 1 o'clock; *dvâ cāta* = 2 o'clock; *pēt cāti* = 5 o'clock.

The parts of an hour are expressed as follows: *pōla dvâ* or *jèdan ÿ po or jèdan ÿ trídeseēt* = 1.30.

<i>dvâ ÿ pètnaest</i>	}	= 2.15.
<i>dvâ ÿ chètvṛt (or fṛtāl)</i>		
<i>chètvṛt (or fṛtāl) pròshlo<sup>1</sup> dvâ</i>		
<i>pètnaest (minúta) pròshlo dvâ</i>		

All these are commonly used, though the first is considered the best. The word *fṛtāl* comes from the German word *Viertel* = *quarter*, and does not sound well.

<i>dvánaest ÿ trídeseēt ÿ pēt</i>	}	= 12.35.
<i>dvádeseēt ÿ pēt (minúta) do jèdan</i>		
<i>pēt minúta pròshlo pōla jèdan</i>		

<i>dvánaest ÿ chètvṛt ÿ pēt</i>	}	= 12.45.
<i>chètvṛt (or fṛtāl) do (or na) jèdan</i>		
<i>trī chètvṛtī (or fṛtāla) na jèdan</i>		
<i>pètnaest (minúta) do jèdan</i>		

*y kōlniko cāti . . . ? = at what o'clock?*

*y chètiri cāta = at 4 o'clock.*

*y pēt cāti = at 5 o'clock.*

## CHAPTER 18

### THE USE OF THE NUMERALS

#### Vocabulary

*dân (m.) = day*

*mīnūt (m.) = minute*

*pèdeļa (f.) = week*

*gōdina (f.) = year*

*pīle (n.)*

*pīlād (f. pl.)*

*pêd (m.) = row (e.g. of chairs)*

}

= *chicken*

<sup>1</sup> Literally = 15 gone 2.

## Reading Exercise

1. Двâ ўчени̑ка, трѣ ўченице и чѣтири ўчитеља су ў школи. 2. Шѣст ўчени̑ца̑ и пѣт ўчени̑ка̑ нѣсу бѣли ў цркви. 3. Мѣ ѣмамо<sup>1</sup> дванаест ўчитеља у нашој школи. 4. Сѣноћ је у нашој друштву бѣло сѣдам људи, дѣвет го-спођа, трѣ дѣвојке и пѣт дечака. 5. Дан и ноћ ѣмају<sup>1</sup> двадесет и чѣтири часа (ог сата); јѣдан сат ѣма<sup>1</sup> шездесѣт мину̀та, а јѣдан мину̀т шездесѣт секунда̀. 6. Јѣдан мѣсец ѣма ѣли двадесет и ѣсам ѣли двадесет и дѣвет ѣли трѣдесет дана ѣли трѣдесет и јѣдан дан. 7. Јѣдна гѣдина ѣма трѣ стѣтине (ог трѣста) шездесѣт и пѣт ѣли шездесѣт и шѣст дана. 8. У јѣдној гѣдини ѣма дванаест мѣсеци, у мѣсецу ѣма чѣтири недеље. 9. Мѣ смо у двадесетом веку, у хиљаду дѣвет стѣтѣна седмнаестој гѣдини. 10. Ја сам бѣо у Бѣограду хиљаду ѣсам стѣтѣна осамдесѣт шѣсте гѣдине. 11. Кад сте бѣли у Лондѣну?—Бѣо сам хиљаду ѣсам стѣтѣна дѣведесѣт дѣвѣтѣ. 12. Обѣ брѣта су ми жи́ва. 13. Обѣ њѣгове сѣстре бѣле су у Парѣзу. 14. Прѣви пѣт сам бѣо код нас кад ми је бѣло трѣнајест гѣди́на. 15. Обѣјица су здра́ви. 16. Трѣја ко̀ла су прѣд ку́ом. 17. Сѣдморо дѣце нѣје бѣло ў школи. 18. Двѣдесѣторо људи бѣло је ў цркви. 19. У вѣрту је са̀мо чѣтворо ја̀гњѣди (ог у вѣрту су са̀мо чѣтири ја̀гњѣта. 20. Чѣтѣорица нѣсу Енгле́зи а трѣјица јѣсу. 21. Дѣсетѣорица су Срѣби а дванаестѣорица су Ру́си. 22. Трѣје пѣладѣ је ў шуми (ог трѣ пѣлета су . . .). 23. У свѣкој клѣпи ѣма пѣ двѣ ѣака. 24. У свѣком рѣду је (ог су) по чѣтири војни̑ка. 25. Трѣпут су бѣли у Лондѣну. 26. Сѣдам пу̀та сам бѣо у Парѣзу. 27. То је јѣдан од мо̀јих најбо̀лих пријѣтеља.

<sup>1</sup> Verb ѣмати = *to have*, cf. p. 104.

## PART II

### CHAPTER 19

#### THE VERBS

##### THE FORMATION OF THE INFINITIVE AND THE PRESENT

THE Serbian verb has the following parts : the present, the past (compound past or perfect), the imperfect, the aorist, the pluperfect, the future, the exact future, the conditional, the imperative, the infinitive, the present and past indeclinable participles (or gerunds), the past participles (declinable) active and passive.

The present, imperfect, and aorist are simple tenses ; the future, past (compound perfect), pluperfect, and conditional are compound tenses. Serbian strictly speaking possesses only one voice, the active ; the passive is expressed by means of auxiliary verbs and the passive participle.

There is no subjunctive mood.

The commonest parts of the verb in general (conversational) use are : the present, past, future, conditional, imperative, and infinitive.

In order to form the parts of the verb it is necessary to know the infinitive and the present, because very often the present stem, from which are formed the present tense and the imperative, is different from the infinitive stem, from which are formed the infinitive, past, future, and conditional.

The infinitive of most verbs ends in -ТИ, and this is usually joined to the root of the verb by the following connecting vowels or syllables : -а-, -ова- (-ева-, -ива-), -ну-, -и-, and -е-, e.g. зв-à-ти = *to call*, вѣр-ова-ти = *to believe*,

им-а-ти = *to have*, дѣг-ну-ти = *to lift*, ѹч-и-ти = *to learn*, вид-е-ти = *to see*. Зва-, верова-, има-, дигну-, учи-, виде-, are called the *infinitive stem*.

Sometimes the ending -ти is added directly to the root of the verb, e.g. трѣс-ти = *to shake*, чѹ-ти- = *to hear*, пѣ-ти = *to drink*; when the root of such verbs ends in a guttural (г, к, х), this last coalesces with the т of the infinitive ending and forms ħ, e.g.

мòħи = *to be able*, derived from мог-ти

рѣħи = *to tell*, ,, ,, рек-ти

лѣħи = *to lie down*, ,, ,, лег-ти

сѣħи = *to cut*, ,, ,, сек-ти

врħи or врѣħи = *to thresh*, ,, вр(е)х-ти

When the root of such verbs ends in a dental (д or т), this last by a process of dissimilation becomes с, e.g.

плѣсти = *to plait, to knit*, derived from плет-ти

крàсти = *to steal*, ,, ,, крад-ти

The root of these verbs is thus disguised in the infinitive, but reappears in the present and in other parts of the verb.

The present is formed by adding the personal endings to the root, to which they are joined by the following connecting vowels or syllables, -е-, -не-, -је-, -и-, -а-, e.g. зòв-ѣ-м = *I call*, дѣг-нѣ-м = *I lift*, чѹ-јѣ-м = *I hear*, им-ā-м = *I have*, ѹч-ѣ-м = *I learn*.

Verbs which have -ова-, -ива-, and -ева- as the connecting syllable in the infinitive, have -yje- in the present, e.g. вѣр-yjē-м = *I believe*; the syllable -ова-, &c., arose as the result of forms such as вер-у-а-ти; this is a double formation, two syllables (-у-а-, -у-је-) connecting the root with the infinitive and the present endings.

When the ending -е-м is added to verbs with the root in a guttural, г, к, х become ж, ч, ш, e.g. сек-е-м (inf. сѣħи,



cf. p. 18) becomes  $\text{céч-ē-м} = I \text{ cut}$ , but the ending of the 3rd pers. pl., which is  $-y$  and is added without any connecting vowel, does not affect such roots, e.g.  $\text{céк-y} = \text{they cut}$ .

When the ending  $-e-м$  is added to verbs with the root in a dental, this last remains, e.g.  $\text{плѣт-ē-м} = I \text{ plait, I knit}$ .

The verb  $\text{мѡѠи}$  has the form  $\text{мѡгy}$  for both 1st pers. sing. and 3rd pers. pl., but in the other persons  $г$  becomes  $ж$ , e.g.  $\text{мѡж-e} = \text{he can}$ .

Such forms as  $\text{зове-}$ ,  $\text{дигне-}$ ,  $\text{чује-}$ ,  $\text{има-}$ ,  $\text{учи-}$ ,  $\text{верује-}$ ,  $\text{може-}$ ,  $\text{тресе-}$ ,  $\text{плете-}$ , are called the *present stem*.

From this it will be seen that it is impossible to deduce the present from the infinitive, although in a large number of verbs the stem of both happens to be the same.

The verbs are divided into *four* classes according to the vowels or syllable which connects the root with the personal endings of the present :  $-e-$ ,  $-he-$ ,  $-je-$ , and  $-и-$  ; those with the connecting vowel  $-a-$  are really a subdivision of the  $-je$  verbs, but are so numerous and common that they are here treated as a *fifth* class.

Of actual kinds of present endings (consisting of connecting vowel and personal ending) there are only *three*, viz.

	I.	II.	III.
Sing. 1.	$-\bar{e}м$	$-\bar{a}м$	$-\bar{i}м$
2.	$-\bar{e}ш$	$-\bar{a}ш$	$-\bar{i}ш$
3.	$-\bar{e}$	$-\bar{a}$	$-\bar{i}$
Pl. 1.	$-\bar{e}мо$	$-\bar{a}мо$	$-\bar{i}мо$
2.	$-\bar{e}те$	$-\bar{a}те$	$-\bar{i}те$
3.	$-\bar{y} (-ej\bar{y})$	$-aj\bar{y}$	$-\bar{e}$

The three forms of the present are here given in full :

I.  $\text{трѣсти} = \text{to shake}$  ; II.  $\text{имати}^1 = \text{to have}$  ; III.  $\text{учити} = \text{to learn, to teach}$ .

<sup>1</sup> In Serbian this verb is used only in its literal meaning, and not as an auxiliary, but cf. p. 118.

I. (jâ) трѣсѣм, <i>I shake</i> , &c.	(мѣ) трѣсѣмо
(тѣ) трѣсѣш	(вѣ) трѣсѣте
(ôн) (òна) трѣсѣ	(òни) (òне) трѣсѣ̄
(òно)	(òна)
II. (jâ) ѣмāм, <i>I have</i> , &c.	(мѣ) ѣмāмо
(тѣ) ѣмāш	(вѣ) ѣмāте
(ôн) (òна) ѣмā	(òни) (òне) ѣмаj̄
(òно)	(òна)
III. (jâ) ѹчѣм, <i>I learn, I teach</i> , &c.	(мѣ) учѣмо
(тѣ) ѹчѣш	(вѣ) учѣте
(ôн) (òна) ѹчѣ	(òни) (òне) ѹчѣ̄
(òно)	(òна)

That is to say, for practical purposes, the present endings of the verbs of the first three classes (-e-, -he-, -je-) are the same.

According to their infinitives, i.e. the vowels or syllables which connect the root with the infinitive ending, the verbs fall into a far larger number of divisions which are distributed amongst the above-mentioned classes.

Of actual kinds of infinitive endings (consisting of connecting vowel or syllable and infinitive ending) there are *four*; a *fifth* category consists of those verbs in which the infinitive ending -ти is added directly to the root, viz.

1. трѣс-ти = *to shake*, чѹ-ти = *to hear*.
2. зв-ѹ-ти = *to call*, вѣр-ѡв-а-ти = *to believe*, ѣм-а-ти = *to have*.
3. дѣл-ну-ти = *to lift*.

4. *ѹч-и-ти* = *to learn*.

5. *вѣд-е-ти* = *to see*.

The following list gives a picture of the commonest kinds of verbs divided into the five classes according to the present stem with subdivisions according to the infinitive stem.

## I.

Connecting vowel *-e-*.

1. Infinitive ending added directly to root :

*трѣс-ти* = *to shake*, root *трес-*, pres. stem *тресе-*, pres. *трѣсѣм* = *I shake* <sup>1</sup> (trans.).

*плѣс-ти* = *to knit*, root *плет-*, pres. stem *плете-*, pres. *плѣтѣм* = *I knit*.

*сѣѣ-ти* = *to cut*, root *сек-*, pres. stem *сече-*, pres. *сѣчѣм* = *I cut*.<sup>2</sup>

*грѣпс-ти* = *to scratch*, root *греб-*, pres. stem *гребе-*, pres. *грѣбѣм* = *I scratch*.

2. Infinitive ending preceded by *-e-*, *which is part of the original root* :<sup>3</sup>

*ѹзѣ-ти* = *to take*, root *-e-* (*ѹз-* is a prefix and *-e-* is the remains of an old nasal vowel, which reappears in the present ; this verb never appears except compounded), pres. stem *ѹзме-*, pres. *ѹзмѣм* = *I take*. Cf. *ѵт-ѣ-ти* = *to take away*, pres. *ѵтмѣм*.

*пѵчѣ-ти* = *to begin*, root *-че-* (also resulting from an old nasal vowel), pres. stem *почне-*, pres. *пѵчнѣм* = *I begin*.

*мрѣ-ти* = *to die*, root *мре-* (derived from *мер-*), pres. stem *мре-*, pres. *мрѣм* = *I die*.

Special mention must be made of the verb *дѵ-нѣ-ти* = *to*

<sup>1</sup> *трѣсти се*, *intrans.* = *to tremble*.

<sup>2</sup> N.B. *to cut the hair* is *шѣшати* (Class III, 2 b) *кѵсу*, lit. *to shear the hair*.

<sup>3</sup> To this class also belongs *насѹти* = *to fill up* (*to pour out*, cf. p. 208), pres. *наспѣм*.

*bring*, and other compounds of -неги; -не- is contracted from -несе-, and the present of this verb is донѣсѣм = *I bring*.

3. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -а- :

зв-ѣ-ти = *to call*,<sup>1</sup> root зв- or зов-, pres. stem зове-, pres. зовѣм = *I call*.

пр-ѣ-ти = *to wash* (trans.), root пр- or пер-, pres. stem пере-, pres. пѣрѣм = *I wash* (cf. p. 142).

Note. Not all verbs in this division lose the vowel of the root in the infinitive.

## II.

Connecting syllable -не- in the present and -ну- in the infinitive (for these verbs cf. p. 128).

дѣг-ну-ти = *to lift*, root диг-, pres. stem дигне-, pres. дѣгнѣм = *I lift*.

тѣ-ну-ти = *to sink, to drown* (intrans.), root то- (originally топ-), pres. stem тоне-, pres. тѣнѣм = *I am sinking, I am drowning*.

Note. Many verbs which originally belonged to the first class, and have retained infinitives like those of that class, have now presents according to the second class, e.g.

лѣг-ти = *to lie down*, root лег-, pres. stem легне-, pres. лѣгнѣм = *I lie down*.

сѣ-сти = *to sit down*, root сед-, pres. stem седне-, pres. сѣднѣм = *I sit down*.

помѣ-ти = *to help*, root (по)мог-, pres. stem помогне-, pres. помѣгнѣм = *I help*.

Similarly the verb стѣти = (1) *to stand still*, (2) as an auxiliary *to begin*, has as its present стѣнѣм, as have also its

<sup>1</sup> звѣти се = *to be called, named*, pres. зовѣ се = *is called*, како се зовѣ . . . = *what is the name of . . .*

numerous compounds, e.g. *òстати* = *to remain*, pres. *òстанĕм*, which are the *perfective* verbs (cf. p. 129) corresponding in meaning to the compounds of *-стàжати*, which are *imperfective* and belong to Class III, 2 a, e.g. *òстàжати* = *to remain*, pres. *òстàжĕм*, *пòстати*, pres. *пòстанĕм* *perfective* and *пòстàжати*, pres. *пòстàжĕм* *imperfective* = *to become*.

Conversely many verbs of Class II omit the syllable *-ну-* in the formation of the past (compound) tense, e.g. *дĕгнути*, past participle active *дĕгнуо*, *дĕгнула* or *дĕгао*, *дĕглā*, cf. p. 139, i.e. go into Class I.

### III.

Connecting syllable *-je-*.

1. Infinitive ending added directly to root.

a. Roots ending in vowels :

*чÿ-ти* = *to hear*, root and inf. stem *чу-*, pres. stem *чу-je-*,  
pres. *чÿжĕм* = *I hear*.

*пĕ-ти* = *to drink*, root and inf. stem *пи-*, pres. stem *пи-je-*,  
pres. *пĕжĕм* = *I drink*.

b. Roots ending in consonants :

*млĕ-ти* (derived from *мел-ти*) = *to grind*, root *мел-* (inf. stem *мле-*), pres. stem *мĕље-* (= *мел* + *je*), pres. *мĕљĕм* = *I grind*.

*жĕти* or *жĕѣти* (derived from *жен-ти*) = *to reap*, root *жен-* (inf. stem *же-* or *жĕе-*), pres. stem *жĕе-* or *жаѕе-*, pres. *жĕĕм* or *жаѕĕм* = *I reap*.

*пĕти се* (derived from *пен-ти*) = *to climb*, root *пен-* (inf. stem *пе-*), pres. stem *пеѕе-*, pres. *пĕѕĕм се* = *I climb*.

2. Infinitive ending joined to the root by *-a-*.

a. In these verbs when the root ends in a vowel, *-j-* or *-в-* is inserted in the infinitive (and also of course in those

parts of the verb derived from it), in order to avoid the hiatus, e.g.

бpи-*ж*-а-тн = *to shave* (trans.), root бpи-, inf. stem бpи*ж*а-,  
pres. stem бpи-*ж*е-, pres. бpи*ж*ѣм = *I shave*.<sup>1</sup>

да-*в*-а-тн = *to give*, root да-, inf. stem да*в*а-, pres. stem  
да-*в*е-, pres. да*в*ѣм = *I give*.

b. In these verbs, when the root ends in a consonant, this last coalesces with the -*ж*- of the connecting syllable in the manner already described on pp. 18, 103, e.g.

мѣт-а-тн = *to put*, root мѣт-, inf. stem мѣта-, pres. stem  
мѣ*ж*е- (= мѣт + *ж*е), pres. мѣ*ж*ѣм = *I put*.

л*а*г-а-тн = *to (tell a) lie*, root л*а*г-, inf. stem л*а*га-, pres. stem  
л*а*же- (= л*а*г + *ж*е), pres. л*а*жѣм = *I lie*.

пом*а*гати = *to help*, root -маг-, inf. stem по-мага-, pres. stem  
помаже- (= маг + *ж*е), pres. пом*а*жѣм = *I help*.

пл*а*к-а-тн = *to weep*, root пл*а*к-, inf. stem плака-, pres. stem  
плаче- (= плак + *ж*е), pres. пл*а*чѣм = *I weep*.

џ*а*х-а-тн = *to ride*, root џ*а*х-, inf. stem џаха-, pres. stem џаше-  
(= џах + *ж*е), pres. џ*а*шѣм = *I ride*.

вѣз-а-тн = *to bind, to tie*, root вез-, inf. stem ве*з*а-, pres.  
stem веже- (= вез + *ж*е), pres. вѣжѣм = *I bind*.

пи*с*-а-тн = *to write*, root пи*с*-, inf. stem пи*с*а-, pres. stem  
пише- (= пи*с* + *ж*е), pres. пи*ш*ѣм = *I write*.

п*о*-сл-а-тн = *to send*, root -сл-, inf. stem -сла-, pres. stem  
-ш*л*е-, pres. п*о*ш*л*ѣм = *I send*.

Note. In this verb the soft (or palatal) quality of the sound *ж* has affected the *с* over the *л*; this verb is perfective (cf. p. 125), the imperfective form is сл*а*тн, the pres. of which is ш*а*лѣм (or ш*ѣ*лѣм).

т*и*ц-а-тн се = *to concern*, root т*и*ц-, inf. stem т*и*ца-, pres. stem  
тиче-, pres. т*и*че се (3rd pers. sing.) = *it concerns*.

<sup>1</sup> *to get shaved (pfv.)* is обpи*ж*ати се.

In the verbs of this class, when the root ends in -м, -п, or -б, л is inserted in the present and those parts derived from it, e.g.

(х)рám-а-ти = *to limp, to go lame*, root (х)рам-, inf. stem храма-, pres. stem храмље- (from храм + је), pres. хрámљēm = *I limp*.

In the verbs of this class, when j is contained in the root it is absorbed in the present, e.g.

кàшљ-а-ти = *to cough*, root кашљ-, inf. stem кашља-, pres. stem кашље-, pres. кàшљēm = *I cough*.

3. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -ова-, -ива-<sup>1</sup>, -(j)ева-<sup>1</sup>, and sometimes -ава-; pres. endings joined to the root by -yj(e)-, e.g.

вѐр-ова-ти = *to believe*, root вер-, inf. stem верова-, pres. stem верује-, pres. вѐрyјēm = *I believe*.

показ-íва-ти = *to show*, root (по)-каз-, inf. stem показива-, pres. stem показује-, pres. показyјēm = *I show*.

вој-èва-ти = *to make war*, root вој-, inf. stem војева-, pres. stem војује-, pres. вòjyјēm = *I make war*.

4. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -е-; pres. endings joined to the root by -е-, contracted from -еје-, e.g. ÿм-е-ти = *to know how*, root ум-, inf. and pres. stem уме-, pres. ÿмēm = *I know how*.

Note. The only other common verbs like this are разÿмети = *to understand*, pres. разÿмēm, and смѐти = *to dare, to be allowed*, pres. смēm. N.B. the 3rd pers. pl. of these three verbs ends, not in -y, cf. p. 103, but in -eјy, e.g. ÿмејÿ = *they know how*, разÿмејÿ = *they understand*, смѐјÿ = *they dare*.

It is important to notice that the verb смѐјати се = *to laugh* belongs to category III, 2 a (cf. p. 115), *I laugh* = смѐјēm се, *they laugh* = смѐјÿ се.

<sup>1</sup> N.B. Not all verbs in -ивати and -евати belong to this class, cf. умíвати, p. 114, 144, пѐвати, p. 144.

## IV.

Connecting vowel -a- in both present and infinitive; the presents of these verbs were originally formed with the connecting syllables -aje-, which became contracted to -a- (cf. p. 103).

им-а-ти = *to have*, root им-, inf. and pres. stem има-, pres.  
ймām = *I have*.

## V.

Connecting vowel -и-.

1. Infinitive and present endings joined to the root by -и-, e.g.

ѹч-и-ти = *to learn*, root уч-, inf. and pres. stem учи-, pres.  
ѹчїм = *I learn*.

2. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -e-, pres. endings by -и-, e.g.

вїд-е-ти = *to see*, root вид-, inf. stem виде-, pres. stem  
види-, pres. вїдїм = *I see*.

3. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -a-, pres. endings by -и-<sup>1</sup>; this -a- in the infinitive, and in those parts of the verb derived from it, was originally -e-, as in вїдети, but this was a long ē, which had the effect, when the root of such verbs ended in a guttural, of changing the guttural into a palatal consonant, while itself became a, e.g.

дрѣж-а-ти = *to hold*, root дрѣж-, inf. stem дрѣжа- (from дрѣг-ē),  
pres. stem дрѣжи-, pres. дрѣжїм = *I hold*.

трѣч-а-ти = *to run*, root трѣч-, inf. stem трѣча- (from трѣк-ē),  
pres. stem трѣчи-, pres. трѣчїм = *I run*.

When such roots ended in -зг-, -ск-, these groups now appear as -жд-, -шт-, e.g.

звїждати = *to whistle*, pres. звїждїм from root звизг-.

<sup>1</sup> To this class also belongs formally заспати = *to fall asleep*, pres. заспїм.



4. Infinitive ending joined by -а- to roots ending in -j, e.g.

бòj-а-ти се = *to fear*, root боj-, inf. stem боја-, pres. stem боји-, pres. бòjѣм се = *I am afraid*.

To this group also belong the verbs  
стаj-а-ти = *to stand*, root стаj- or стоj-, inf. stem стаја-, pres. stem стòји-, pres. стòjѣм = *I stand*.

по-стòj-а-ти = *to exist*, pres. по-стòjѣм = *I exist*.

### Irregularities of the Verbs other than those already mentioned

1. дăти = *to give* has as present дăм,<sup>1</sup> дăш, дă, дăмо, дăте, дăду, i.e. except in the 3rd pers. pl. it follows the verbs of Class IV; but it also has another present, viz. дăдем, дăдеш, дăде, дăдемо, дăдете, дăду, and even another one according to Class II, viz. дăднѣм. These are common colloquially.

2. знăти = *to know* has a regular present according to Class IV, viz. знăм (contracted from зна-ј-ем), but it also has a present formed on the analogy of дăдем, viz. знăдем.

3. имати = *to have* also has an alternative (colloquial) present similarly formed, viz. имăдем, and a perfective (cf. p. 34) present имаднем.

This verb when it is negatived loses its initial и- and appears in the form:

1. (jâ) нѣмăм = *I have not* (мѣ) нѣмăмо = *we have not*

2. (тѣ) нѣмăш (вѣ) нѣмăте

3.  $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{òн} \\ \text{òна} \\ \text{òно} \end{array} \right\} \text{нѣмă}$   $\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{òни} \\ \text{òне} \\ \text{òна} \end{array} \right\} \text{нѣмају}$

<sup>1</sup> This is not contracted, like the verbs of Class IV, but is an old 'irregular' verb which has become assimilated to them.

The 3rd pers. sing. is very common as an impersonal verb for construction, cf. p. 120, e.g.

ѣма = *there is, il-y-a, es gibt,*

нѣма = *there is not, il n'y a pas, es gibt nicht,*

and can also be used in the future and in the past, cf. p. 120.

4. иѣи = *to go* forms its present from a stem ид-, viz. иѣм, иѣш, иѣ, иѣмо, иѣте, иѣд̄. Its past part. act., from which is formed the (compound) past, is иѣао, иѣла, иѣло, pl. иѣли, иѣле, иѣла.

When this verb is compounded with prepositions (and in the process becomes perfective, cf. p. 123 f.), the initial и- disappears if the prefix ends in a vowel, e.g. доѣи = *to come* (from до + иѣи), pres. доѣм, &c., past доѣао, &c., but it remains if the prefix ends in a consonant, e.g. отѣи = *to go away* (from од + иѣи, от is the older form of this preposition), pres. отѣд̄м, which colloquially always is cut down to ѡд̄м, &c., past ѡтиѣао, &c. Compounded with the prefix из- this verb has two forms, viz. изѣи = *to go out*, pres. изѣм, &c., and изѣи, pres. изѣм, &c., past изѣао and изѣло, &c.

5. јѣти = *to eat* was originally an 'irregular' verb like дѣти, and had as present јѣм, јѣш, јѣ, јѣмо, јѣте, јѣду, which is still occasionally used in the southern dialect, and even appears as ѣјѣм, ѣјѣш, ѣјѣ, ѣјѣмо, ѣјѣте, ѣјѣ, but has now been generally replaced by the forms јѣд̄м, јѣд̄ш, јѣд̄е, јѣд̄мо, јѣд̄те, јѣд̄, i.e. follows Class I, 1.

6. мѡѣи = *to be able*, cf. p. 103; the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. and the 1st and 2nd pers. pl. of this verb, besides the regular forms мѡжѣш, мѡжѣ, &c., appear colloquially as мѡреш, мѡре, мѡремо, мѡрете.

7. хтѣти (or хòтети) = *to be willing, to want, to wish*, has an irregular present, viz. хòху, хòхеш, хòхе, хòхемо, хòхете, хòхѣ ; for the apocopated forms, cf. p. 73.

8. бѣти = *to be*, cf. pp. 31, 59, 73, 81, 91, but there is another verb, бѣти = *to strike, to hit*, which is conjugated exactly like пѣти, cf. p. 107, III, 1 a.

### Negations and Interrogations

In the negative forms of all verbs except бѣти (cf. p. 34), хтѣти (cf. p. 74), and ѝмѣти (cf. p. 111) the negative particle не is put immediately before the verb, but is not joined to it, e.g.

(jâ) не трѣсѣм, &c. = *I do not shake.*

(jâ) не учѣм, &c. = *I do not learn.*

But in the compound past and future the negative forms of бѣти and хтѣти are used, and не is not added as well.

The interrogative is formed in all cases by putting the interrogative particle ли immediately after the verb. If the personal pronoun is retained, its place is after the interrogative particle, e.g.

ѝмѣте ли (вѣ) ? = *have you ?*

трѣсете ли (вѣ) ? = *are you shaking ?*

учѣте ли (вѣ) ? = *are you learning ?*

The question can be also formed by means of the other interrogative particles, such as зѣр, дѣ ли, and also in the form of an assumption, cf. p. 33, the verb *to be* = бѣти.

In sentences which begin with an interrogative word no interrogative particle is necessary, cf. p. 34, e.g.

штѣ (вѣ) учѣте ? = *what are you learning ?*

*Whether* is rendered by да ли, and must never be translated, as colloquially in English, by *if*, e.g.

нѐ знѧм да ли је код куће = *I don't know whether (if) he is at home.*

## CHAPTER 20

## REFLEXIVE AND IMPERSONAL VERBS

IN Serbian the ordinary active verbs may be transitive or intransitive. Many transitive verbs become intransitive by being made reflexive, that is, preceded or followed by се, which is the shortened form of the reflexive pronoun себе, cf. p. 55, e.g. умѣвати<sup>1</sup> = *to wash*, transitive, i.e. *to wash some one*, or *to wash the face or the hands*, умѣвати се<sup>1</sup> = *to wash*, intransitive, i.e. *to wash oneself*. In conjugation the pronoun се precedes or follows the verb according to whether the personal pronouns are used or not; the present of this verb would therefore be :

- Sing. 1. ја се ѹмѣвам,      or    ѹмѣвам се = *I wash (myself).*  
 2. ти се ѹмѣваш,      or    ѹмѣваш се  
     ѡн се }  
 3. ѡна се } ѹмѣва,      or    ѹмѣва се  
     ѡно се }
- Pl. 1. ми се ѹмѣвамо,      or    ѹмѣвамо се  
 2. ви се ѹмѣвате,      or    ѹмѣвате се  
     ѡни се }  
 3. ѡне се } умѣвају, or    умѣвају се  
     ѡна се }

<sup>1</sup> N.B. The perfective (cf. p. 125) form of this verb is ѹмити се, which belongs to Class III, 1 a.

But there are certain intransitive verbs which are only reflexive, e.g. смѣјати се<sup>1</sup> = *to laugh*, cf. p. 107, III, 2 a, подемевати се (+ dat.) = *to laugh at*, дѣсити се and догòдити се = *to happen*, задòцнити се = *to be late*, рýгати се = *to mock at*, смѣшити се (+ на + acc.) = *to smile (at)*, на̀дати се = *to hope*, бòјати се (+ gen.) = *to fear*, чýдити се = *to be astonished*, шàлити се = *to joke*.

Other reflexive verbs are reflexive in a mutual sense, e.g. тýкн се (pres. тýчѣм се) = *to hit each other, to fight*, тýкн = *to hit somebody*, љýбити = *to kiss*, љýбити се = *to exchange kisses*.

Finally, a transitive verb used reflexively may be the equivalent of the passive, e.g.

тò се не гòворѣ = *that is not said* (lit. *that itself not say* = *one does not say that*).

òва кнѣга мнòго се ч̀итà = *this book is much read*.

òве нòвинѣ мàло се ч̀итају = *this newspaper is little read*.

Cf. also pp. 196, 197.

When the reflexive verbs are negatived the negative particle не must, as always, immediately precede the verb, e.g. jà се не ўмѣвам or не ўмѣвам се = *I do not wash*, jà се не смѣјѣм or не смѣјѣм се = *I am not laughing*, љàци се не тýку = *the schoolboys are not fighting*.

Impersonal verbs are such as дѣсити се<sup>2</sup> and догòдити се, of which the imperfective (cf. p. 121) forms are дешàвати се and догàђати се, e.g. штà се дѣсило (or догòдило, cf. above) ? = *what has happened?* ч̀есто се дешàва (or дòгàђа) = *that often happens*; ч̀инити се = *to seem*, ч̀инѣ ми се = (1) *it seems to me*, (2) *I fancy*.

<sup>1</sup> смѣјати се на нѣкога = *to smile at some one*, смѣјати се нѣкоме = *to laugh at any one*.

<sup>2</sup> This is also sometimes used personally.

Expressions which in English are impersonal, e.g. *it is raining*, are rendered in Serbian as follows :

пăдă кїша  
or идѣ кїша  
or кїша је } = *it is raining* (lit. *falls rain, goes rain, rain is*).

пăдă снѣг  
or снѣг је } = *it is snowing* (lit. *falls snow, snow is*).

кїша лїјѣ (pres. of лїти = *to pour*, like пїти) = *it is pouring*  
(lit. *rain pours*).

ноћас је пăдала кїша = *last night it rained*.

јучѣ је пăдала кїша цѣо дăн = *yesterday it rained all day*.

данас ће (нѣће) пăдати кїша = *it will (it will not) rain to-day*.

мрăз је  
or мрѣнѣ (pres. of мрѣнути) } = *it is freezing*, lit. *frost is, freezes*.

ноћас је бїо мрăз = *last night it froze*, lit. *has been frost*.

бїло је мрăза = *there has been a frost*, lit. *it was of frost*.

бїће мрăза = *it will freeze*, lit. *it will be of frost*.

ова рѣка нїкад нѣ мрѣне = *this river never freezes*.

рѣка је зăмрѣла (past of зăмрѣнути = *to get frozen*) = *the river has frozen over*.

грѣти or грѣти (ipfv., Class V, 2 or 1) = *to thunder*,<sup>1</sup> сѣвати (Class IV) = *to lighten*.

On the other hand, expressions which in English are personal, e.g. *I am cold*, are in Serbian impersonal, e.g.

(х)ладно ми је = *I am cold*, lit. *cold to me is*.

топло ми је = *I am warm*, lit. *warm to me is*.

врућина ми је = *I am hot*, lit. *heat to me is*.

These expressions without the pers. pron. become impersonal, e.g.

<sup>1</sup> A thunderstorm is грѣлавина = *thunder*; other words for storm are олуја and бұра. *Lightning* is мўња.

вруќина је = *it is hot*, lit. *heat is*.

(*I am hungry* = гладан сам, and *I am thirsty* = жéдан сам, i.e. are personal in both languages.)

Other very common impersonal expressions are :

жåо ми је = *I am sorry*, lit. *pity to me is*.

жåо ми га је = *I am sorry for him*, lit. *pity to me of him is*.

ò, кåко ми је жåо = *oh, how sorry I am*, lit. *oh, how to me is pity*.

штèта је = *it is a pity* (this is followed by што = *that*).

кåква штèта = *what a pity*.

мýло ми је } = *I am glad*, lit. *dear to me is*.  
дрåго ми је }

бýло ми је врёло прýјатно, штò . . . = *I was very glad that*,  
lit. *to me was very pleasant that . . .*

бýће ми вeðма мýло, прýјатно = *I shall be very glad*.

трèба = *it is necessary*; this is used impersonally with the infinitive, with the dative of the personal pronoun, or followed by да = *that*; its use as a personal verb, e. g. трèбåм, is common but is considered incorrect, and is unnecessary as the verb мóрати = *to be obliged*, мóрåм = *I must* (followed by да = *that*, e.g. мóрåм да ìдeм = *I must go*), can always be used. Трèба can be used in the pres., past, or future, as follows :

тò трèба òдмах урåдити (or учýнити or свршити) = *it is necessary to do that at once* = *that must be done*.

тò трèба дånåс да свршимo = *we must do that to-day*, lit. . . . *that we do that to-day or get that done*, свршити, lit. = *to finish*.

штå вам трèба? = *what do you need?*

трèба ми (jèдан) нòж, (jèдна) кåшика и (jèдно) пeрo = *I need a knife, a spoon, and a pen*, or the adjective пòтребан = *needful* can be used : пòтребан ми је нòж, пòтребна ми је кåшика, пòтребно ми је пeрo.

With divisible matter only трѣба is used, followed by the genitive, e.g.

трѣба ми (х)àртије = *I require some paper.*

пòтребно (n.) can also be used impersonally like трѣба, e.g.

пòтребно је да òдѣте (cf. p. 123) у Лòндòн = *you must go (it is necessary for you to go) to London.*

нўжно је = *it is necessary*, and is similarly used.

трѣба used in the past = *ought to have*, e.g. трѣбало је да òдѣм јўчѣ у Лòндòн àли нїсам мòгао = *I ought to have gone to London yesterday, but I could not*; but *I had to go to London yesterday* = мòрао сам јўчѣ да òдѣм у Лòндòн.

зà тò ќе нам трѣбати (or трѣба ќе нам зà тò) мнòго нòвца = *we shall need a lot of money for that.*

фàлтити <sup>1</sup> = *to lack*, e.g. мàло фàлї па да пàднѣм = *little is wanting but that I fall* = *I nearly fell.*

Otherwise *must* is very commonly rendered by the intransitive verb мòрати, мòрāм = *I must, I have to*, мòрао сам = *I had to*, мòраћу = *I shall have to*, usually followed by да = *that*, мòрамо сўтра да идѣмо (or òдѣмо) у Лòндòн = *we have to go to London to-morrow*, мòрали смо јўчѣ тò да ўрāдимо = *we had to do that yesterday*, мòраћемо сўтра тò да ўрāдимо = *we shall have to do that to-morrow*; *have to* has also a literal equivalent in Serbian, viz. òмати да, e.g. вї òмāте да свршите тāј пòсао дāнāс = *you have to (you must) finish that work to-day*, though it is not quite such a strong expression as in English.

мàрити = *to care about*, e.g. нè мàрїм за вїно = *I don't care about wine*, òн нè мàрї нї за штa = *he does not care about anything or he does not worry about anything*, but it is

<sup>1</sup> From the German *fehlen*, not to be confused with фàла, from хвàла = *thanks*.



very commonly used impersonally in the phrase нѣшта тѣ нѣ мѣрѣ, or нѣ мѣрѣ нѣшта = *it does not matter at all*. брѣга = *care, worry*, is used in impersonal expressions such as тѣ ми је вѣлика брѣга = *that is a great worry to me*, also ironically брѣга ми је зѣ тѣ = *a lot I worry about that*.

Another very common impersonal expression is вѣлѣ (inf. вѣлѣти, *ipfv.*, Class IV), derived from the Italian *vaglia* = (1) *it is worth*, (2) *it is worth while, it is important, one must, one ought*, e.g.

Ѡвѣј кѠн вѣлѣ двѣ хѣлѣде дѣнарѣ = *this horse is worth*<sup>1</sup> 2,000 *dinars* (francs), тѣ нѣшта не вѣлѣ = *that is worthless, no good*.

вѣлѣ да<sup>2</sup> Ѡдѣте дѣнѣс у пѠзорѣште = *you ought to go to the theatre to-day (it is worth your while)*.

не вѣлѣ тѣ да рѣдите = *you ought not to do that (don't do that, it is not right)*.

не вѣлѣ рѣдити нѣдељѠм = *it is not right to work on Sundays* (inst. sing. of нѣдељѣ).

It can also be used personally, e.g.

дѣнѣс нѣшта не вѣлѣм = *I am no good to-day* (sc. *in health*).

Used of food this verb means *to be good*, e.g.

вѣлѣ ли Ѡвѣј сѣр ? = *is this cheese good (= in good condition) ?*

вѣлѣ ! = *it is ! Ѡве крѣшке не вѣлѣју = these pears are not good*.

Other impersonal verbs are :

сврѣтити = *to itch* (like вѣдетити, cf. p. 110, V, 2), e.g. сврѣтѣ ме Ѡко = *my eye itches*.

голицѣтити = *to tickle* (trans.), e.g. нѣшто ме голицѣ у грѣлу = *something is tickling me in my throat*.

<sup>1</sup> врѣди (3rd pers. sing. pres. from врѣдити) is also commonly used for *is worth*.

<sup>2</sup> The form вѣлда (= вѣла + да . . .) = *perhaps*.

штѹцати се = *to hiccough*, e.g. штѹцā ми се = *I have got the hiccoughs*.

гāдити се = *to feel sick*, e.g. гāдī ми се = *I feel sick*, also figuratively гāдī ми се на њēга = *I loathe him*.

мѹка ми је also = *I feel sick* (lit. *torment to me is*). But *to be sick* (*to vomit*) is rendered by the transitive verb пōвраћати = *to bring back*, e.g. сīнōћ сам пōвраћао = *I was sick in the night*.

пōвраћати се = *to return*; this verb, besides being used literally in such phrases as грōзница се пōвраћа = *fever returns*, is also used in the meaning of гāдити се.

бōлети = *to ache* (like вїдети), e.g. бōлī ме глава, зѹб, стōмāк, &c. = *my head, tooth, stomach aches*.

тїцати се = *to concern*, e.g. штō се тїче мēне (*gen.*) = *as far as I am concerned*.

дōпадати се (*ipfv.*), дōпасти се (*pfv.*) = *to please*, cf. p. 207.

мїрїсати = *to smell* (trans. + acc., also intrans.), e.g. òvā рѹжа дївно мїрїше = *this rose smells beautiful* (but also мїрїшēm рѹжу = *I smell the rose*).

знāчити = *to signify*, штā знāчи òvō = *what does this mean?*

їма = *there is*, нēма = *there is not*, cf. p. 137.

When followed by a noun denoting divisible matter, їмā takes the genitive, e.g. їмā ли шēкєра? = *is there any sugar?* but if reference is made to one particular thing it takes the nominative, e.g. у òvōј вāроши їмā вړло лēпа црквā = *in this town there is a very beautiful church*.

Нēма usually takes the gen., but cf. p. 138.

This can also be used in the future and in the past, viz. їмаће and нēће їмати, їмало је and нїје їмало, though in these cases the use of the verb бїти in the same sense is commoner, e.g. хōће ли вечєрāс бїти хлѣба? = *will there be bread this evening?* нēће (бїти) = *there will not (be)*,

je ли бiло мнoгo свeтa у пoзopиштy ? = *were there many people in the theatre ?* бiло je = *there were*.

There is no exact Serbian equivalent to the English *one*, which can be rendered by the 3rd pers. sing. of a reflexive verb, e.g. тo ce нe кaжe (cf. p. 115) = *one does not say that*, нe мoжe ce рeћи = *one cannot tell*, нe знa ce = *one does not know*, or by such expressions as чoвeк = *man*, свaки (or свaкo) = *every one*, нe мaрi свaки тo дa рaди = *one does not care to do that*, чoвeк никaд нe знa штa кe гa снaћи = *one never knows what is going to happen to one*.

The phrase *they say* is rendered by кaжу or вeлe, without the personal pronoun, cf. pp. 134, 209.

*Cost*: кoликo кoштa oвo ? = *how much does this cost ?*

*It is possible* = мoгуће (je); *impossible* = нeмoгуће or ниje мoгуће, also мoжда (= *perhaps*, contracted from мoже дa and requiring a continuation, e.g. мoжда je тaкo = *perhaps it is so*) and мoже бити or нe мoже бити.

*It is probable* = вeрoвaтнo (je), *improbable* = нeвeрoвaтнo.

*It is forbidden* = (1) зaбpaњeнo je, (2) ниje слoбoднo, (3) нe смe ce.

*It is allowed* = (1) слoбoднo je, (2) смe ce.

## CHAPTER 21

### THE ASPECTS OF THE VERB: THEIR MEANING, FORMATION, AND USE

IN Serbian, as in the other Slavonic languages, almost every verb exists in two forms or *aspects*, which are generally known as *imperfective* and *perfective*, and which are used according to the nature of the action expressed by the verb.

The *aspects* are varieties of the same verb which express varieties of the same action. The imperfective aspect is used

to express an action whose completion is not foreseen, which is still in progress, which usually takes some time, or which frequently recurs in the past, present, or future. The perfective aspect is used to express an action which has been completed, whose completion is definitely foreseen, though it may not actually occur, which is single or instantaneous or momentary, or which has only just begun.

Which verbs are imperfective and which perfective can only be learned by practice, but there are certain categories and characteristics of verbs which help one in recognizing the aspect.

Simple verbs, i.e. verbs not compounded with prepositions, may be of either aspect, but the majority of them are imperfective, e.g. *и́ти* = *to go*, *у́чить* = *to learn*, *и́мать* = *to have*, *пи́ть* = *to drink*, *звѣти* = *to call*, are all imperfective, i.e. they denote processes which are still going on or were, are, or will be of uncertain duration.

Examples of simple verbs which are perfective are *ку́пить* = *to buy* (a particular thing or particular things at a particular time), *рѣ́ти* = *to tell* (one particular thing), *ба́цить* = *to fling* (once), *ста́ти* = *to come to a stop*, *да́ти* = *to give* (a particular thing once), and very many of the verbs of Class II, e.g. *дѣ́нуть* = *to lift*, *мѣ́нуть* = *to put* (cf. p. 106).

Simple imperfective verbs, when they are compounded with prepositional prefixes (and thereby become compound verbs), become perfective, the effect of the prefix being to define more closely, to limit or to alter the activity denoted by the verb, e.g.

*обѣ́ти* = *to go round* (a particular thing once), *нау́чить* = *to learn completely*, *по́пить* or *и́спить* = *to drink up, to drink completely*, *по́звать* = *to invite* (on a particular occasion).

Needless to say, each of these verbs can also be compounded with other prepositional prefixes, each of which imparts to the verb a different meaning. There follows a list of the prepositional prefixes in alphabetical order :

до = *up to, until*

пре = *across*

за = *for*

пред = *before*

из = *out*

при = *to (close to)*

на = *on*

про = *past, through*

над = *over*

раз = *asunder, apart, also amplifies the action of a verb*

о or об = *round*

с or са = (1) *with, (2) down*

од = *from*

from

по = generally limits the activity denoted by the verb

у = *in, into*

под = *under*

уз = *up*

Not every verb, of course, is used in composition with *all* of these prefixes, but the verb *йти* can be compounded with all of them except one (*пред*), when the following list is obtained (the verb itself occasionally changing in appearance in the process, cf. p. 112) :

до́йти (*inf.*), до́йдем (*pres.*), до́шао (*past part.*) = *to come*.

за́йти, за́йдем, за́шао } = *to go behind, to go deeply into*  
 заи́йти, заи́йдем, заи́шао } (literally and figuratively).

изи́йти, изи́йдем, изи́шао } = *to go out*.  
 иза́йти, иза́йдем, иза́шао }

на́йти, на́йдем, на́шао = *to find*.

наи́йти, наи́йдем, наи́шао = *to come upon, to come suddenly*.

нади́йти, нади́йдем, нади́шао = *to come on from above*.

оби́йти, оби́йдем, оби́шао = *to go round*.

оди́йти, оди́йдем, оди́шао = *to go down (of water)*.

оти́йти, оти́йдем (or о́ддем), оти́шао = *to go away*.

по́йти, по́йдем, по́шао = *to start off*.

поди́йти, поди́йдем, поди́шао = *to come under, to approach*.

прéћи, прêћēм, прèшао = *to go across or over.*

прíћи, прíћēм, прíшао = *to approach.*

прóћи, прóћēм, прòшао = *to go past.*

разíћи се, рàзíћу се (3rd pers. pl.), разíшли су се (3rd pers. pl. of the past tense) = *to go apart.*

сíћи, сíћēм, сíшао = *to come down from.*

ýћи, ýћēм, ýшао = *to come into, to go into.*

узíћи, ýзíћēм, узíшао = *to go up on to.*

All these verbs are perfective.

It is necessary to say that very frequently these prefixes lose their original meaning in composition, and acquire secondary meanings, e.g. with the verb стàти (cf. p.106 ; N.B. simple verbs which are already perfective remain perfective in composition) :

зàстати = *to stop for a moment.*

нàстати = *to set in* (of the weather, seasons, times).

òстати = *to remain.*

пòстати = *to become, to grow.*

прèстати = *to cease.*

прíстати = (1) *to agree*, (2) *to moor* (of a ship, intrans.).

рàстати се = *to part company with.*

сàстати се = *to meet, to come together.*

ýстати (from уз + стати) = *to get up.*

Verbs may be compounded with more than one preposition, of course remaining perfective, e.g.

снàћи from с + на + ићи) = *to befall.*

пронизíћи (or пронизáћи) = *to proceed from.*

превазíћи (from пре + уз + ићи) = *to excel.*

сýстати (from с + у + стати) = *to get very tired.*

Examples of verbs compounded with the prefix пред-, and perfective, are :

прѣдвидѣти = *to foresee.*

прѣтскáзати = *to foretell.*

прѣдлòжити = *to propose.*

прѣтставити = *to introduce, to represent.*

It often happens that *one* prefix in making the verb perfective loses some or all of its original meaning, while the other prefixes compounded with the same verb retain it ; *по-* generally limits or defines the activity denoted by the verb without altering its meaning, e.g. *жѣсти* (*ipfv.*) = *to eat*, *пòжести* (*pfv.*) = *to eat up something* ; *слàти* (*ipfv.*) = *to send*, *пòслати* (*pfv.*) = *to send (a particular thing once)*, *чѣкати* (*ipfv.*) = *to wait*, *пòчекати* (or *òчекати*, both *pfv.*) = *to wait a bit* ; but occasionally other prefixes also *merely* make the verb perfective, and no rule can be given as regards these, e.g. *пíсати* (*ipfv.*) = *to write*, *напíсати* (*pfv.*) = *to write a particular thing or things, to get written* ; *пíтати* (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to ask*, *запíтати* or *упíтати* (*pfv.*) = *to ask a single question* ; *грáдити* (*ipfv.*) = *to build*,<sup>1</sup> *сагрáдити* (*pfv.*) = *to get built, to finish building.*

When a simple imperfective verb has been made perfective by the addition of a prefix, which retains its own meaning and alters that of the verb, *and* it is necessary to use this verb in an imperfective sense, *then* imperfective verbs are formed, with the retention of the prefix and altered meaning, by lengthening or otherwise changing the stem, e.g.

*звàти* (*ipfv.*) = *to call*, *пòзвати* (*pfv.*) = *to invite (once)*,  
*позíвати* (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to invite (frequently, or merely imperfectively, cf. p. 122).*

*говòрити* (*ipfv.*) = *to speak*, *одговòрити* (*pfv.*) = *to answer*,  
*одговàрати* (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to answer.*

<sup>1</sup> *A building* is *грàђевина* or *згрáда*.

б'йти (*ipfv.*) = to hit, to beat, у'бити (*pfv.*) = to kill, pres.

у'бијем, у'бијати (*ipfv.*, Class IV, pres. у'бијам) = to kill.  
 кри'ти (*ipfv.*) = to hide (pres. кри'јем), по'крити (*pfv.*) = to  
 cover, покр'ивати (*ipfv.*, pres. покр'ивам) = to cover.

че'кати (*ipfv.*) = to wait, до'чекати (*pfv.*) = to receive people,  
 to wait till they come, доче'квати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 3)  
 = to receive people.

мо'ћи (*ipfv.*, cf. p. 112) = to be able, помо'ћи (*pfv.*, cf. p. 106)  
 = to help, пома'гати (*ipfv.*) = to help (Class III, 2 b).

пи'сати (*ipfv.*) = to write, опи'сати (*pfv.*) = to describe,  
 опи'свати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 3) = to describe.

ви'дети (may be either *ipfv.* or *pfv.*) = to see, пр'едвидети  
 (*pfv.*) = to foresee, пред'ви'ђати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = to  
 foresee.

у'чити (*ipfv.*) = to learn, из'у'чити (*pfv.*) = to learn thoroughly,  
 to finish learning, изуч'авати (*ipfv.*) = to be occupied in  
 learning thoroughly.

Such series cannot always be formed, e.g. у'мети (*ipfv.*) =  
 to know how, раз'у'мети (*ipfv.*) = to understand, под'разуме'  
 вати се (*ipfv.*) = to be implied, разуме'вати (*ipfv.*) and  
 под'разуме'ти are seldom used.

From other verbs again such series can be formed to almost  
 any extent, e.g. from пи'сати (*ipfv.*) = to write, потпи'сати  
 (*pfv.*), потпи'свати (*ipfv.*) = to sign, препи'сати (*pfv.*),  
 препи'свати (*ipfv.*) = (1) to copy out, (2) to prescribe,  
 запи'сати (*pfv.*), запи'свати (*ipfv.*) = to make a note or notes.

Such verbs as these compound imperfective verbs are  
 usually known as *frequentative* verbs, but they are by no  
 means always used with frequentative meaning, cf. p. 128.

It was mentioned on p. 122 that there are also simple verbs  
 which are perfective; these usually have simple verbs  
 corresponding to them in meaning which are imperfective,



are derived from the same root, but are of a different formation and class, e.g.

кúпити (*pfv.*, Class V), купòвати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 3) = *to buy*; бáцити (*pfv.*, Class V), бáцати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to throw*; дàти (*pfv.*, Class IV), дáвати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2a) = *to give*. To this category of verbs also belong those perfective verbs of Class II which are called *instantaneous*, e.g.

мèтнути (*pfv.*), мèтати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 b) = *to put*.

дй́гнути (*pfv.*), дй́зати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 b) = *to lift*.

When such simple perfective verbs are compounded with a prefix they naturally remain perfective, *but* the simple imperfective verbs corresponding to them in meaning, when compounded with a prefix, *remain imperfective*, e.g.

дòдати (*pfv.*), додáвати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to add*, (2) *to pass a thing*, e.g. *at table*.

зàдати (*pfv.*), задáвати (*ipfv.*) = *to give figuratively*, e.g. *trouble* (мýку), *to inflict a defeat* (ýдáр), *a wound* (pàny).

йздати (*pfv.*), издáвати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to give up*, e.g. *a criminal*, (2) *to publish, to edit*.

прèдати (*pfv.*), предáвати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to hand over, to transmit*, (2) *to teach, to lecture* (used reflexively = *to surrender*).

прй̀дати (*pfv.*), придáвати (*ipfv.*) = *to impart*.

прòдати (*pfv.*), продáвати (*ipfv.*) = *to sell*.

рàздати (*pfv.*), рàздáвати (*ipfv.*) = *to distribute*.

ýдати се (*pfv.*), удáвати се (*ipfv.*) = *to get married*, N.B. only of women,<sup>1</sup> ýдати or удáвати, transitive = *to give away in marriage*.

пýстити (*pfv.*), пýштати (*ipfv.*) = *to let go*.

донýстити (*pfv.*), допýштати (*ipfv.*) = *to allow, to permit*.

<sup>1</sup> *To marry*, of men, is ожèнити се (*pfv.*).

But frequently compound imperfective verbs of one of the other formations are preferred, e.g. одбáцити (*pfv.*) = *to fling away*, but одбáцívати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) is much commoner than одбáцати; similarly поткúпити (*pfv.*) = *to bribe*, has *ipfv.* поткупльívати, Class IV.

From the verbs of Class II, e.g.

пòдметнути (*pfv.*), подмèтати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to put under*,  
(2) *to allege*.

пòддигнути (*pfv.*, from под + дигнути), пòдизати (*ipfv.*) =  
(1) *to pick up*, (2) *to bring up* (e.g. a child), (3) *to erect*.

As regards verbs of this class (II, with infinitives in -нути) it is important to notice that while many of them are perfective 'instantaneous', like those just mentioned, others denote a gradual process and are imperfective, e.g. мр̄знути = *to get frozen*, a perfective of which would be, e.g. прòмрзнути = *to get frozen through and through*.

There are some verbs one or both of which are never used in their simple form in either aspect, but have numerous compounds, some of which are imperfective and others perfective, e.g.

ўзèти (*pfv.*, cf. p. 105), ўзимати (*ipfv.*, Class IV, really a compound of ймати) = *to take*.

òтèти (*pfv.*), òтимати (*ipfv.*) = *to take away by force*.

заўзèти (*pfv.*), заўзимати (*ipfv.*) = *to occupy*.

дòнèти (*pfv.*, cf. pp. 105, 106), донòсити (*ipfv.*, Class V) = *to bring* (the simple verb нòсити, *ipfv.*, Class V = *to carry*).

òднèти (*pfv.*), однòсити (*ipfv.*) = *to carry away*.

пòчèти (*pfv.*, cf. p. 105), пòчињати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 a) =  
*to begin* (*trans.* or *intrans.*).

објáснити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1), објáшњávати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) =  
*to explain* (јасан = *clear*).

обѣ́кати (*pfv.*, Class IV), обе́кати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to promise* (обе́кање = *a promise*).

òстати (*pfv.*, compound of стати, cf. pp. 107, 124), òстајати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 a) = *to remain*.

посѣ́тити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1), посе́ќивати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to visit, to attend (school)* (пòсета = *a visit*).

пòкушати (*pfv.*, Class IV), покушáвати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to try, to attempt* (пòкушáј = *an attempt*).

прѣ́стати (*pfv.*), прѣ́стајати (*ipfv.*) = *to cease*.

пòстати (*pfv.*), пòстајати (*ipfv.*) = *to grow, to become*.

прìзнати (*pfv.*, compound of знати, cf. p. 143), признáвати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 a) = *to admit, to confess*.

сáзнати or дòзнати (*pfv.*), сазнáвати or дознáвати (*ipfv.*) = *to find out, to discover, to learn*, sometimes with differentiation of meaning, пòзнати (*pfv.*) = *to recognize people*, познáвати (*ipfv.*) = *to know personally*.<sup>1</sup>

Special mention must be made of the verb ìћи = *to go* and its compounds; as explained on p. 123 f., these latter are all *perfective*; their corresponding *imperfectives* are formed from a totally different root, viz. -лазити, e.g. дòлазити (Class V, 1) = *to come constantly*, зàлазити = *to set (of the sun)*, заìлазити = *to go deeply into*, ìзлазити or изìлазити = *to go out continuously* (cf. ìзлаз = *exit*), нàлазити = (1) *to find*, (2) *to consider*, наìлазити = *to come upon often*, обìлазити = (1) *to go round often*, (2) *to visit frequently*, òдлазити = (1) *to go away often*, (2) *to visit often*, пòлазити = *to start* (e.g. of the train, i.e. regularly, though this verb is also used of a single action in phrases such as кàд пòлазíte ? = *when do you start ?*), ùлаз or ùлазак = *entrance*, &c.

лèћи (pres. лèгнѣм, Class I and II), *pfv.* = *to lie down*, has *ipfv.* лèжати (pres. лèжѣм, Class V, 2) = *to lie, to be*

<sup>1</sup> An acquaintance is пòзнанѣк (*masc.*), пòзнаница (*fem.*).

*lying*, with which is connected полòжити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1); the simple *ipfv.* verb лòжити is only used of *laying the fire* and полáгати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 *b*, pres. полáжĕм) = *to lay, to place*, cf. below.

сѣсти (pres. сѣднĕм, Class I and II), *pfv.* = *to sit down*, has *ipfv.* сѣдети (pres. сѣдĕм, Class V, 2) = *to sit*.

помòћи (pres. помòгнĕм, Class I and II), *pfv.* = *to help*, has *ipfv.* помáгати (pres. помáжĕм, Class III, 2 *b*).

### Examples of the use of the Aspects

The difference in meaning between an imperfective and a perfective infinitive has already been indicated ; a few more examples follow :

мòжете ли дóћи сўтра? = *can you come to-morrow?* (i.e. one particular occasion); áко хòжете мòгу дòлазити свáкога дáна = *if you like I can come every day* (gen. of time when); нĕмáм мáстила, нĕ могу пĕсати = *I have no ink, I cannot write*; мòжете ли му напи́сати нĕколико рĕчĕй? = *can you write him a few words?* (with definition of what has to be written); полáгати (*ipfv.*) ìспит = *to go in for an examination*; полòжити (*pfv.*) ìспит = *to pass an examination successfully*.

As regards the present tense, the general rule is that, to describe any action which is in actual progress, or which is frequently repeated, the present of the *imperfective* verb must be used; the present of a *perfective* verb is most frequently used (1) in subordinate clauses, which may refer to actual or hypothetical facts in the past or in the future, (2) in narration, like the 'historic present' in English, to describe vividly events in the past (this includes the use in principal sentences of the presents of such instantaneous

verbs as мѣтнути, бацити); examples of the *imperfective* present are :

шта̀ ра̀дите ?—пи́шем пи́сма = *what are you doing?*—*I am writing letters* ; ја̀ пи́шем мно̀го пи́сма̀ = *I write many letters* ; гдѣ̀ к̀упу̀јѣте цигарѣте ? = *where do you buy cigarettes?* рѣ̀дѣ̀вно прѣ̀ма̀м ср̀пске нѣ̀вине = *I get (receive) Serbian newspapers regularly* (прѣ̀мати, *ipfv.*, Class IV); вѣ̀з (ог̀ вла̀к) по̀лази у сѐдам са̀ти = *the train starts (sc. regularly or on a particular day) at 7 o'clock* ; од̀лази́те ли чѣ̀сто у по̀зорѣ̀ште ? = *do you often go to the theatre?*

Examples of the *perfective* present are :

трѐба да̀на̀с да̀ на̀пи́шете о̀во пи́сма = *it is necessary that you write this letter to-day* (= you must write) ; мо̀ра̀м да̀на̀с да̀ к̀упи́м цигарѣте = *I must buy cigarettes to-day* ; не мо̀гу то да̀на̀с да̀ у̀ра̀ди́м = *I cannot do that to-day* ; мо̀жете ли да̀ до̀ђѣте с̀у̀тра ? = *can you come to-morrow?* хо̀ћете ли да̀ до̀де́мо да̀на̀с у по̀зорѣ̀ште ? = *shall we go (lit. do you wish that we go . . .) to the theatre to-day?* да̀ ли би́(сте) х̀те́ли (cf. pp. 33, 82) да̀ до̀де́мо . . . ? = *would you like to go?*

In all such sentences as these, although it would be possible to use the perfective infinitive, viz. напи́сати, ура̀дити, к̀упити, до̀ћи, оти́ћи, it is far more colloquial to resolve this into a subordinate clause introduced by да̀ = *that* ; this tendency is one of the chief peculiarities of Serbian syntax (cf. pp. 118, 209). Other examples are :

ра̀доваћу се а̀ко с̀у̀тра до̀ђѣте = *I shall be glad if you come to-morrow* ; ка̀д к̀упи́те књи́гу по̀шљи́те ми је = *when you buy the book send it me.*

It must be understood that if the verb in the subordinate clause denotes an imperfective action it is of course itself

imperfective, e.g. зàр нѐ видѝте да пѝшѐм ? = *do you not see that I am writing ?*

An example of the 'historic present' :

jà òдѐм у Лòндòн, нàђѐм свòга прѝјатеља, одвѐдѐм (pres. of одвѐсти, Class I, 1) га у пòзорѝште, зàтѝм се врàтѝм у хòтел, љђѐм љ собу, мѐтнѐм кàпљт на стòлицу и бàцѝм се на пòстелљ мр̀тав љмòран = *I go off to London, find my friend, take him to the theatre, then return to (my) hotel, go into (my) room, put (my) coat on the chair, and fling myself on the bed dead tired.*

The use of the two aspects in the future and in the past corresponds closely to their use in the infinitive ; examples of the imperfective future are : пѝсаќу му = *I am going to write to him* (not specifying when or what), пѝсаќу му да дòђѐ = *I shall write to him to come* (sc. at some time), дòлазиќу вам чѐсто = *I shall often come to (see) you* ; if such imperfective future actions are expressed by a subordinate clause, the imperfective present must be used, e.g. штà ћемо тàмо да рàдимо ? = *what are we going to do there ?*

Examples of the perfective future are : дàнàс ћу му напи́сати пѝсмо = *I shall write him a (or the) letter to-day* ; àко мòгу (or мòгнем, cf. p. 106), дòќи ћу сљтра = *if I can I shall come to-morrow.*

Examples of the imperfective past are : рàнијѐ сам пѝсао мнòго пѝсàмà = *formerly I used to write many letters* ; кад је љшао љ собу жà сам чѝтао нòвине = *when he came into the room I was reading a (or the) newspaper* ; жѐсте ли чѝтàли òвљ књѝгу ? = *have you (ever) read this book ?* свàкога лѐта òдлазили смо на мòре = *every summer* (gen. of time when) *we used to go to the seaside* ; штà сте рàдили кад је бòмба пàла (past of пàсти, pfv., root пад-, Class I and II) = *what were you doing when the bomb fell ?*

Examples of the perfective past are : дан̄ас сам напи́сао дѣсет пи́сма̄ = *to-day I have written ten letters* ; а јучѣ сам напи́сао пѣтнаест = *and yesterday I wrote fifteen* ; јѣсте ли прѣчиталӣ ов̄у књ̄игу ? = *have you finished this book ?* ; прѣшлѣга лѣта ђишлӣ смо на мѣре = *last summer we went to the seaside* ; шт̄а сте ура́дилӣ кад̄ је бѣмба па́ла ? = *what did you do when the bomb fell ?*

The *imperative* is similarly used in *commands*, e.g. пи́шите ми = *write me* (sc. *more than once*) ; напи́шите му дан̄ас пи́смо = *write him a (or the) letter to-day* ; чит̄ајте ср̄пске нѣвине = *read the Serbian newspapers* ; прочит̄ајте ов̄у књ̄игу = *read this book (and finish it)* ; чин̄ите што гѣд хѣте = *do whatever you like* ; уч̄ните or ура́дите тѣ дан̄ас = *do that to-day* ; дѣлазите рѣдѣвно = *come regularly* ; дѣђите вечѣрас = *come this evening*.

In *prohibitions* the perfective imperative is scarcely ever used ; these are expressed by either the imperfective imperative or by нѣмѣј (*sing.*), нѣмѣјте (*pl.*), followed by the imperfective infinitive or by a subordinate clause, e.g. не пи́шите му or нѣмѣјте му пи́сати = *do write to him* ; нѣмѣјте тѣ да р̄адите = *don't do that* ; the *pfv.* imperative is used in a few such phrases as не забѣравите (ме) = *don't forget (me)* ; не забѣравите тѣ да ура́дите = *don't forget to do that* (забѣравити, *pfv.*, Class V, 1).

As regards the use of the two aspects in the other tenses, there is no difficulty with the *imperfect*, because this tense can only be formed from *imperfective* verbs. The *ao*rist on the other hand may be formed from verbs of either aspect, though the *ao*rist of *perfective* verbs is naturally much the commoner of the two ; the *ao*rist of an *imperfective* verb denotes an action of short or limited duration in the past, e.g. љстаде (3rd pers. sing. *ao*rist of љстати, *pfv.* = *to get*

up), чѣта (3rd pers. sing. aorist of чѣтати, *ipfv.* = *to read*)  
мало и пи́са (3rd pers. sing. aorist of пи́сати, *ipfv.* = *to write*),  
па онда иза́ђе (3rd pers. sing. aorist of иза́ћи, *pfv.* = *to go*  
*out*) љ поље = *he got up, read a little and wrote, and then*  
*went out.*

### Verbs of two Aspects.

Some verbs are regarded as being of both aspects, e.g. вѣдети = *to see* ; чѣти = *to hear*, e.g. вѣдѣм га = *I see him* ; ако га вѣдѣте ка́жите му да дође = *if you see him tell him to come* ; чѣјѣте ли грмљавину ? = *do you hear the thunder ?* кад чѣјѣте мој глас, љште = *when you hear my voice, come in.* This applies also to the present and the imperative of ка́зати = *to say, to tell*, though otherwise this is regarded as a perfective verb with the corresponding imperfective казівати (Class III, 3, cf. показати, *pfv.*, показівати, *ipfv.* = *to show*), e.g. шта́ ка́жете ? = *what do you say ?* не́ знам шта́ да ка́жѣм = *I don't know what to say ;* ка́ко да ка́жѣм ? = *how (or what) shall I say ?*

The same applies to the verb вѣлѣм, Class V, 2, which has no infinitive, and is frequently used as a synonym of ка́жѣм, e.g. шта́ вѣлѣте ? (more colloquial) = шта́ ка́жете ? ако вѣ вѣлѣте, ја́ ћу до́ћи = *if you say (sc. you want me to), I shall come.*

The aspects may also be divided into the following five categories :

### I. IMPERFECTIVE

1. Continuous, e.g. се́дети, Class V, 2 = *to sit (to be sitting)* ; лѣтети, Class V, 2 = *to fly (to be flying)*.

2. Frequentative or iterative, e.g. се́дати, Class IV = *to sit down frequently* ; потскаківати, Class III, 3 = *to keep jumping up.*



## II. PERFECTIVE

1. Momentary or instantaneous, e.g. мѣтнути, Class II = *to put* ; скòчити, Class V, 1 = *to give a jump*.

2. Final, indicating the completion of an action, e.g. поц̀рнети, Class V, 2 = *to become black (or dark)*.

3. Inceptive, indicating the commencement of an action, e.g. пòћи, Class I, 1 = *to start* ; полѣтети, Class V, 2 = *to fly off* ; запевати, Class IV = *to break into song* ; засмѣјати се, Class III, 2 a = *to break into laughter* ; заплакати, Class III, 2 b = *to burst into tears*.

## CHAPTER 22

## PRONOUNS DECLINED LIKE ADJECTIVES

## AND THE USE OF THE PRESENT TENSE OF

## TO HAVE

Sing.	овàкàв (m.), овàквã (f.), овàквò (n.)	} = <i>like this, of this kind</i>
Pl.	овàквī (m.), овàквē (f.), овàквã (n.)	
also	овàкī (m.), овàкã (f.), овàкò (n.)	
	овàкī (m.), овàкē (f.), овàкã (n.)	

тàкàв	} = <i>like that, of that kind</i>	оволīкī = <i>of this size</i>
тàкī		толīкī = <i>of that size</i>

онàкàв	} = <i>like that (yonder), of that kind (yonder)</i>	онолīкī = <i>of that size (yonder)</i>
онàкī		

They are declined in two different ways ; those ending in -и, e.g. овàкī, тàкī, are declined like the definite adjectives, cf. жўти, p. 65 ; the others, e.g. овàкàв, тàкàв, like the indefinite adjectives, cf. жўт, p. 64.

The *neuter singular* of all these pronouns can be used adverbially, e.g. тòлико = *so much*, just as кòлико (cf. p. 77) = *how much*.

## Vocabulary

понéдељак (or понéдељнѣк or понéдеонѣк) = <i>Monday</i>	зáбран = <i>copse</i>
ýторак (or ýтóрнѣк) = <i>Tuesday</i>	пòток = <i>stream, brook</i>
среда = <i>Wednesday</i>	цвѣће = <i>flowers</i>
четвѣртак = <i>Thursday</i>	гòлýб = <i>pigeon</i>
пéтак = <i>Friday</i>	зéц = <i>hare (also rabbit)</i>
сýбота = <i>Saturday</i>	рѣба = <i>fish</i>
нéдеља = <i>Sunday</i>	рáк = <i>crab</i>
јáнуáр = <i>January</i>	штáп = <i>stick</i>
фéбруáр = <i>February</i>	нòвац = <i>money</i>
мáрт = <i>March</i>	сáлòн = <i>drawing-room</i>
áпрѣл = <i>April</i>	двóрац = <i>palace</i>
мáј = <i>May</i>	кафáна = <i>inn (also мехáна)</i>
јýни = <i>June</i>	пастрѣмка = <i>trout</i>
јýли = <i>July</i>	дóстојан = <i>worthy</i>
áвгуст = <i>August</i>	нéдостòјан = <i>unworthy</i>
сéптéмбар = <i>September</i>	зáслужан = <i>who has deserved well of</i>
òктòбар = <i>October</i>	пòтребан = <i>necessary</i>
нòвéмбар = <i>November</i>	сирòмашан = <i>poor</i>
дéцéмбар = <i>December</i>	скупòцен = <i>precious</i>
Бòжић = <i>Christmas</i>	рáскошан = <i>magnificent, luxurious (also spendthrift)</i>
Ýскрс = <i>Easter (lit. Uprising)</i>	слòбодан = <i>free (also permissible)</i>
пријатéљство = <i>friendship</i>	дѣвљѣ = <i>wild</i>
пòмòћ = <i>help</i>	рѣшав = <i>bad</i>
близѣна = <i>neighbourhood</i>	зéлен = <i>green</i>
чáс = (1) <i>hour, (2) moment, (3) lesson</i>	плáв, плáва = <i>blue (also fair-haired)</i>
пòсао = <i>business, job, work</i>	љýбичаст = <i>violet</i>
јéзик = <i>tongue, language</i>	
сýсед = <i>neighbour</i>	
дѣвљáч = <i>game (sc. birds)</i>	

For numerals, adverbs, and prepositions, cf. pp. 92, 189, 151.

## Reading Exercise

1. Овáкáв чòвек је дóстојан вѣсоког пòложáја. 2. Овáкò (adverbial use) рѣшав чòвек је нéдостòјан вáшег

пријателства. 3. Оваквā слика је мнџго скўпља нџго таквā. 4. Овакō (adv.) дџбра жџна зāслужна је вāше пџмџћи. 5. И ја џмāм таквў књџгу. 6. Ёмāте ли и ви такāв шџшџр?—Нџмāм. 7. Кџ џмā овакў књџгу?—Мџја сџстра. 8. Зāр ви нџмāте оваквџ одџло?—Нџмāм. 9. Зāр џмāте онāкāв штāп?—Ёмāм. 10. Ё мџј сўсџд џмā такџг кџња. 11. Ёмāмо ли толџкџ нџвца кџлико нам је пџтребно?—Нџмāмо, џмāмо, мнџго мāње. 12. У нāшем вџрту џмā толџкџ цвџћā кџлико у вāшем. 13. Јā нџмāм толџкџ пријатџла кџлико џн џмā. 14. Ђвāј чџвџк је толџкџ сирџмашан да нџма ни одџла (ог одџло, cf. note). 15. Ёмāте ли јџш вџна у чāши?—Ёмāм. 16. Нџџгова сџстра џмā плāву хāљину, вāша зелџну а мџја љўбичасту. 17. Сџба мџга џца џмā вџлике пџзџре. 18. На зидџвима нāшега салџна џмā скупџцених сликā. 19. Ёмā ли џвде кākва кафāна у близџни?—Ёмā, мāло дāље нāпџд. 20. Ви џмāте џца?—Ёмāм. 21. Ёмā ли дџвљāчи у вāшој шўми?—Нџмā толџкџ кџлико у вāшој. 22. У нāшем зāбрану џмā дџста зџчџвā и дџвњџх голубџвā. 23. У џвџме пџтоку нџма толџкџ рџбā кџлико (џмā) рāкџвā. 24. Ёмā ли кџга у тџј сџби?—Нџмā. 25. Зāр твџј џтац нџмā вџше дџцџ џсим тџбе?—Нџмā. 26. Гџдина џмā двāнаџст месџцā : јāнуār, фџбруār, мāрт, април, мāј, јўни, јўли, а̀вгуст, сџптџмбар, џктџбар, нџвџмбар, дџцџмбар. 27. Мџсџц џмā чџтири нџдеље, нџдеља џмā сџдам дāнā : понџдељац, ўторак (ог ўтџрнџк), сџреда, четвџртак, пџтак, сўбота и нџдеља. 28. Понџдџљнџком, сџредом и пџтџком џмāмо чāсове из џнглџског јџзика, ўтџрнџком, четвџртџком и сўботом из фџрāнцўског, а нџдељџм смо слџбџдни. 29. Пџд кџљевџм двџрџцем џмā вџлики и раскџшан вџрт. 30. Ёмāте ли мнџго пџсла?—Ёмāм.

## Notes

19. Їмā ли = *is there any . . .*

28. понѣдѣљником, &c. : the days of the week used in the inst. sing. = 'on Mondays', &c.

## Note

The object in a sentence after a *negative* transitive verb is frequently put in the genitive as well as in the accusative, though the accusative *can* be used in all cases, is the most frequent, and is generally preferred, e.g. нѣмāм тѣ књѣге or нѣмāм тѣ књѣгу = *I do not possess that book*, нѣ видѣм кѣѣ (or кѣѣ) = *I don't see the house* (also = *I don't see any house*), нѣ чујѣм глāса (or глāс) = *I don't hear the (or a) voice*; but occasionally there may be a slight difference in meaning between the two, e.g. зāшто нѣсте наўчили лѣкцију (or лѣкције)? = *why have you not learnt (your) lesson?* зātō штō нѣмāм књѣгу (acc. sing.) or књѣге (acc. pl.) = *because I have not (got) the book or books* (sc. *the necessary ones*), but зātō штō нѣмāм књѣгā (gen. pl.) = *because I have no books*. But after the *impersonal* expressions нѣмā = *il n'y a pas*, нѣје ѣмāло = *il n'y avait pas*; нѣѣ ѣмāти = *il n'y aura pas*, the genitive is *necessary*, e.g. нѣма (х)лѣба = *there is no bread*; нѣје ѣмāло књѣгā = *there were no books* (cf. p. 120).

## English Sentences

1. These flowers have a very nice smell; what are they called in Serbian?—Indeed, I do not know. 2. My room has four large windows. 3. In our drawing-room there are two tables, ten chairs, a piano, a Serbian carpet, and many other things. 4. Have you (got) flowers like this in your garden? 5. This poor man has no money, and his neighbour has much money. 6. I have never seen a crab so large, or such large, beautiful fishes; what kind are they?—They are called trout, and they are very tasty. 7. In our copse there are many hares, pigeons, and all sorts of game. 8. Please give me another tumbler like

this. 9. He has a Serbian lesson every day. 10. Are there any fish in that lake?—Yes, but in the neighbourhood there is a lake in which there are still bigger and better fishes. 11. My brother has fair hair and blue eyes, but my sister has dark hair and black eyes. 12. A picture of that sort is very precious. 13. A room of this size is very pleasant in summer, but very cold in winter. 14. Is there an inn (cf. p. 52) in this village? 15. He has so much work that he sleeps badly. 16. Easter next year will be on the 15th of April. 17. Christmas this year is on a Sunday. 18. The steamer goes on Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays, and returns on Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Saturdays. 19. This man is not worthy of your friendship, he has many debts. 20. This palace has many magnificent rooms, but has not enough windows, and its walls are not very strong.

## CHAPTER 23

### LIST OF USEFUL VERBS

THESE verbs are given in alphabetical order according to their *present* endings, cf. p. 103 f., together with their past participles active, from which the past tense, and their infinitives, from which the future tense, are formed.

I. Presents in -ем (-jem, -nem, -ujem), like трéсти, cf. p. 104 :

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
бѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to strike, to hit <sup>1</sup>	бѣжѣм	бѣо, -ла
бóсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to butt, to toss	бóдѣм	бó, бóла
брáти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to pluck	бѣрѣм	брáо, -ла
брѣнути (се) ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to care (worry) about	брѣнѣм се	брѣнуо, -ла
брѣсати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to wipe <sup>2</sup>	брѣшѣм	брѣсао, -ла
вѣнути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to wither	вѣнѣм	вѣнуо, -ла

<sup>1</sup> Cf. рáзбити (*pfv.*), рáзбѣжати (*ipfv.*) = to break in pieces, to smash ; óдбити = to refuse (trans.).

<sup>2</sup> *Pfv.*, óбрѣсати.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
вікати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to shout <sup>1</sup>	вічѣм	вікао, -ла
војѣвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to make war	вѡјујѣм	вѡјевао, -ла
вўћи ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to pull <sup>2</sup>	вўчѣм	вўкао, -кла
гїгнути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to perish <sup>3</sup>	гїнѣм	гїнуо, -ла
гладѡвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to starve <sup>4</sup> (intrans.)	гладујѣм	гладѡвао, -ла
грѣјати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to warm <sup>5</sup> (trans. and intrans.)	грѣјѣм	грѣјао, -ла
грїсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to bite <sup>6</sup>	грїзѣм	грїзао, -зла
дарївати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to present <sup>7</sup>	дѡрујѣм	дарївао, -ла
дѡбити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to get <sup>8</sup>	дѡбїјѣм	дѡбио, -ла
зѣбсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to be cold <sup>9</sup>	зѣбѣм	зѣбао, -бла
зимѡвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to winter	зїмујѣм	зїмовао, -ла
зрѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to ripen	зрѣм	зрѣо, <sup>10</sup> -ла
їменовати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to name	їменујѣм	їменовао, -ла
їскати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to require, to demand	їштѣм	їскао, -ла
кѡзати (cf. p. 134) = to say, to tell <sup>11</sup>	кѡжѣм	кѡзао, -ла
казївати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to tell (often) <sup>11</sup>	казујѣм	казївао, -ла
кїснути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to get wet <sup>12</sup>	кїснѣм	кїснуо, -ла

<sup>1</sup> *Pfv.* вікнути = to give a shout.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. обўћи, обўчем, обўкао = to put on clothes, + се = to get dressed, свўћи, &c., also скїнути (Class II) = to take off clothes, свўћи се = to get undressed; all these are *pfv.*

<sup>3</sup> *Pfv.* пѡгинути.

<sup>4</sup> глѡд = hunger.

<sup>5</sup> + се = to warm oneself.

<sup>6</sup> Also ўјести (*pfv.*, cf. јести, p. 112), ујѣдати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = to bite.

<sup>7</sup> Also поклѡнити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1) = to give anything as a present, пѡклѡн = a present.

<sup>8</sup> *Ipfv.* дѡбїјати, Class IV.

<sup>9</sup> A cold in the head is кїјавица (кїјати = to sneeze), a cold in the chest is кѡшаљ (*m.*, lit. cough, cf. p. 109), to catch cold is дѡбити кїјавицу or прозѣбсти (*pfv.*).

<sup>10</sup> = ripe.

<sup>11</sup> Cf. показати and показївати = to show, p. 109.

<sup>12</sup> Cf. кїсео = sour, кїша = rain.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
клѣкнути ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to kneel down	клѣкнѣм	клѣкнуо, -ла
кра̄сти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to steal <sup>1</sup>	кра̄дѣм	кра̄о, -ла
крѣнути <sup>2</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to turn (trans.), + се = to start	крѣнѣм	крѣнуо, -ла
купòвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to buy (cf. p. 127)	кѹпујѣм	кѹповао, -ла
ла̄јати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to bark	ла̄јѣм	ла̄јао, -ла
лѣтовати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to spend the summer	лѣтујѣм	лѣтовао, -ла
лїти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to pour (cf. p. 107)	лїјѣм	лїо, -ла
мїловати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to caress	мїлујѣм	мїловао, -ла
мїти <sup>3</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to wash <sup>3</sup> (trans.)	мїјѣм	мїо, -ла
мр̄знути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to freeze, to be cold	мр̄знѣм	мр̄знуо, -ла
мѹсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to milk	мѹзѣм	мѹзо, -зла
на̀викнути се ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to get used <sup>4</sup>	на̀викнѣм се	на̀викнуо, -ла, ог на̀викао
на̀гнути се ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to bend (intrans.)	на̀гнѣм се	на̀гнуо, -ла
òрати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to plough	òрѣм	òрао, -ла
па̀сти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to fall <sup>5</sup>	па̀днѣм	па̀о, -ла
па̀сти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to pasture (cattle)	па̀сѣм	па̀со, -сла
пе̄ћи ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to bake, also to roast <sup>6</sup>	пе̄чѣм	пе̄као, -кла
по̀бећи ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to run away	по̀бегнѣм	по̀бегао, -гла
прѣсти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to spin	прѣдѣм	прѣо, -ла

<sup>1</sup> *Pfv.* is ўкрасти, &c.

<sup>2</sup> покрѣнути (*pfv.*), покрѣтати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 b) = покрѣт = movement, to move (trans.), покрѣнути се = to move (trans.). <sup>3</sup> Cf. note on p. 142.

<sup>4</sup> *Ipfv.* на̀викàвати се, Class IV; a habit is на̀вика (*f.*), a custom, òбичàј, (*m.*).

<sup>5</sup> *Ipfv. freq.* па̀дати, Class IV.

<sup>6</sup> пе̄чено мѣсо, пе̄цїво ог печѣње = roast meat; to fry is пр̄жити, Class V; па̀стри = тѣсто.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
ра̀довати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to rejoice</i>	ра̀дујѐм се	ра̀довао, -ла
ра̀зликoвати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to differ</i>	ра̀зликyѐм се	ра̀зликoваo, -ла
ра̀сти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to grow</i> (intrans.) <sup>1</sup>	ра̀стѐм	ра̀стаo, ра̀сла
ра̀товати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to be at war</i>	ра̀тујѐм	ра̀товаo, -ла
рѐћи ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to say</i> (cf. pp. 102 178) <sup>2</sup>	рѐкнѐм	рѐкао, -кла
ру̀ковати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to handle, to direct</i> <sup>3</sup>	ру̀кyѐм	ру̀коваo, -ла
срѐсти <sup>4</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to meet</i> (trans., + се, intrans.)	срѐтнѐм	срѐо, -ла
стй̀гнути <sup>5</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to reach, to arrive</i>	стй̀гнѐм	стй̀гаo, -гла
тѐћи ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to flow</i>	тѐчѐм	тѐкао, -кла
тр̀гнути ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to pull</i>	тр̀гнѐм	тр̀гнуo, -ла
ту̀ћи се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to fight</i>	ту̀чѐм се	ту̀као, -кла
у̀мрѐти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to die</i> <sup>6</sup> (cf. p. 105)	у̀мрѐм	у̀мро, у̀мрла
чѐзнути ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to long for</i> <sup>7</sup>	чѐзнѐм	чѐзнуo, -ла

### Note

The use of the verbs мити and пра̀ти is as follows: пѐрѐм рѹке, нoге, тѐло, лице, та̀њир, &c. = *I wash* (or *I am washing*) *hands, feet, body, face, a plate, &c.*; рѹбе се пѐрѐ = *linen is washed* (or *is being washed*); жена мй̀јѐ кoсу = *a woman washes her hair*; у̀мй̀вѐм се (cf. p. 114) = *I wash* (intrans.), or *I am washing* (intrans.), sc. *the face*, i.e. мити, and its compounds are never used of *things*.

<sup>1</sup> Literally; *pfv.* пор̀асти; *to grow* = *to become*, cf. p. 107.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. одрѐћи = *to refuse* (intrans.).

<sup>3</sup> Used reflexively, + се = *to shake hands*.

<sup>4</sup> Root спрeт-, cf. спрѐћа = *fortune*, sc. *good fortune*, спрѐтан or спрѐћан = *fortunate*, нѐспрѐћа = *misfortune*.

<sup>5</sup> Or стй̀ћи.

<sup>6</sup> Has *ipfv.* у̀мирати, Class IV.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. ишчѐзнути (*pfv.*), ишчѐзвати (*ipfv.*) = *to disappear*.



## II. Presents in -ам, like имати, cf. p. 104 :

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
бегати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to run (cf. also p. 148)	бегам	бегao, -ла
вѣрати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to be mis-taken <sup>1</sup>	вѣрам се	вѣраo, -ла
вѣчерати ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to have supper once <sup>2</sup>	вѣчерам	вѣчераo, -ла
глѣдати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to look <sup>3</sup>	глѣдѣм	глѣдаo, -ла
дѹвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to blow	дѹвѣм	дѹваo, -ла
знѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to know <sup>4</sup> (cf. p. 129)	знѣм	знѣo, -ла
играти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to play, to dance <sup>5</sup>	играм	играo, -ла
јављати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to announce, to let know <sup>6</sup>	јављѣм	јављѣaо, -ла
корѣчати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to step <sup>7</sup>	корѣчѣм	кѣрѣчаo, -ла
кѹвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to cook <sup>8</sup>	кѹвѣм	кѹваo, -ла
кѹпати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to bathe (trans., + се, intrans.)	кѹпѣм	кѹпаo, -ла
мѣрати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to be obliged (cf. p. 117)	мѣрам	мѣраo, -ла
нѣдати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to hope <sup>9</sup>	нѣдѣм се	нѣдаo, -ла
нападати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to attack	нападѣм	нападаo, -ла

<sup>1</sup> To make a mistake (*pfv.*) is прѣварити се or погрѣшити, Class V, 1 ; a mistake is погрѣшка. Cf. p. 203, 204.

<sup>2</sup> *Ipfv. freq.*, вѣчеравати, *pres.* вѣчерѣвѣм, Class IV.

<sup>3</sup> изглѣдати = to look like, + као, or simply impersonally изглѣда = it seems (so), or + да = that ; the *pfv.*, to catch sight of, is углѣдати, cf. p. 125.

<sup>4</sup> To get to know (a fact), *pfv.*, is дѣзнати.

<sup>5</sup> игра = (1) a game, (2) a dance.

<sup>6</sup> For *pfv.*, cf. p. 146 ; + се = to appear (lit.).

<sup>7</sup> кѣрѣк = a step.

<sup>8</sup> Kitchen = кѹјна, cook = кѹвѣр (*m.*), кѹварица (*f.*).

<sup>9</sup> нѣда = hope (subst.).

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
òceħати се <sup>1</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to feel</i> (intrans.)	òceħам се	òceħао, -ла
пѣвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to sing</i>	пѣвāм	пѣвао, -ла
плāħати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to pay</i> (cf. p. 146)	плāħāм	плāħао, -ла
прīмати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to receive</i> (cf. p. 147)	прīмāм	прīмао, -ла
прòбати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to taste, to</i> <i>try</i> <sup>2</sup>	прòбāм	прòбао, -ла
пўцати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to shoot</i>	пўцāм	пўцао, -ла
пўштати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to let go</i> (cf. p. 147)	пўштāм	пўштао, -ла
рўчати ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to lunch, to</i> <i>dine</i> <sup>3</sup>	рўчāм	рўчао, -ла
свīрати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to play</i>	свīрāм	свīрао, -ла
сѣħати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to remember</i>	сѣħāм се	сѣħао, -ла
сīјати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to shine</i>	сīјам се	сīјао, -ла
слīкати ( <i>ipfv.</i> and <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to</i> <i>paint, to take a photo</i> <sup>4</sup>	слīкāм	слīкао, -ла
слўшати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to listen</i>	слўшāм	слўшао, -ла
спāвати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to sleep</i> (cf. p. 110)	спāвāм	спāвао, -ла
стрāдати ( <i>ipfv.</i> and <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to</i> <i>suffer</i>	стрāдāм	стрāдао, -ла
трѣбати ( <i>ipfv.</i> and <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to</i> <i>be necessary</i>	трѣба (cf. p. 117)	трѣбало је
ўжинати ( <i>ipfv.</i> and <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to</i> <i>take tea</i> <sup>5</sup>	ўжинāм	ўжинао, -ла
умīвати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to wash</i> (cf. p. 142)	умīвāм се	умīвао, -ла

<sup>1</sup> òceħати is *trans.*, cf. сѣħати се ; *to feel with one's hands* is пīпати, Class IV.

<sup>2</sup> *To attempt*, cf. p. 129.

<sup>3</sup> Or *to dine in the middle of the day* (рўчак); the *evening meal* is always вѣчера, cf. p. 143 ; the *ipfv. freq.* is ручāвати, *pres.* рўчāвам.

<sup>4</sup> слīчан = *like*, òвò је слīчно с тīм = *this is like that* (lit. *with that*).

<sup>5</sup> This meal is called ўжина.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
употребљавати ( <i>ipfv.</i> <sup>1</sup> ) = <i>to use</i>	употребљавам	употребљавао, -ла
хвѡтати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to seize</i> (cf. p. 148)	хвѡтам	хвѡтао, -ла
чѣкати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to wait</i> <sup>2</sup>	чѣкѡм	чѣкао, -ла
чѣтати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to read</i> <sup>3</sup>	чѣтѡм	чѣтао, -ла
штѡмпати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to print</i>	штѡмпѡм	штѡмпао, -ла
шѣгати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to walk about</i> <sup>4</sup>	шѣтѡм се	шѣтао, -ла

### III. Presents in -им like уѣчити, cf. p. 104 :

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
бѡвити се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to sojourn</i>	бѡвѡм се	бѡвио, -ла
бѡцити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to throw</i> (cf. pp. 127, 128)	бѡцѡм	бѡцио, -ла
бѡлети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to ache</i> (cf. p. 120)	(бѡлѡм)	бѡлео, -ла
вѡдити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to lead</i>	вѡдѡм	вѡдио, -ла
вѡлети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to like, to love</i>	вѡлѡм	вѡлео, -ла
врѡтити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to give back</i> <sup>5</sup>	врѡтѡм	врѡтио, -ла
говѡрити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to speak</i>	говѡрѡм	говѡрио, -ла
гѡрети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to burn</i> (intrans. <sup>6</sup> )	гѡрѡм	гѡрео, -ла
грѡдити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to build</i> <sup>7</sup>	грѡдѡм	грѡдио, -ла
грѡдити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to scold</i>	грѡдѡм	грѡдио, -ла
дрѡжати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to hold</i>	дрѡжѡм	дрѡжао, -ла
жѡлети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to wish</i> <sup>8</sup>	жѡлѡм	жѡлео, -ла

<sup>1</sup> *Pfv.* is употребити, Class V, 1 ; + се = *to be used* ; *use* = употреба.

<sup>2</sup> *Pfvs.* are прѣчекати, пѡчекати, and ѡчекати, all = *to wait a little* ; сѡчекати = *to wait for some one (till he comes)*.

<sup>3</sup> *Pfv.* прочѣтати, cf. p. 132 f.

<sup>4</sup> Also хѡдати and прѡћи се (*pres.* прѡђѡм се).

<sup>5</sup> + се = *to return* (intrans.).

<sup>6</sup> *To burn* (trans.) is спѡлити (Class V, 1) or сажѣћи (Class III, 2 a ; *pres.* сажѣжѡм, *past* сажѣгао, сажѣгла), *pfvs.* of пѡлити and жѣћи ; the *pfv.* of гѡрети is изгѡрети.

<sup>7</sup> *Pfv.* сагрѡдити.

<sup>8</sup> e.g. жѡлѡм вам срѣћан пѣт = *I wish you a good journey*.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
жѣвети ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to live</i> (cf. pp. 149, 208)	жѣвѣм	жѣвео, -ла
зѣбрѣнѣти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to forbid</i> <sup>1</sup>	зѣбрѣнѣм	зѣбрѣнио, -ла
жѣвити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to let know</i> <sup>2</sup> (cf. p. 143)	жѣвѣм	жѣвио, -ла
кѣпити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to buy</i> (cf. p. 141)	кѣпѣм	кѣпио, -ла
лѣжати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to lie, to be lying</i> (cf. p. 129)	лѣжѣм	лѣжао, -ла
лѣтѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to fly</i> (cf. p. 134 f.)	лѣтѣм	лѣтео, -ла
лѣжити <sup>3</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to lay a fire</i> (cf. p. 130)	лѣжѣм	лѣжио, -ла
лѣпити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to knock, to bang</i>	лѣпѣм	лѣпио, -ла
мѣрѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to weigh</i> (trans.), <i>to measure</i>	мѣрѣм	мѣрио, -ла
мѣзѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to hate</i>	мѣзѣм	мѣзео, -ла
нѣсѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to carry, to wear</i>	нѣсѣм	нѣсио, -ла
нѣжити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to spend the night</i>	нѣжѣм	нѣжио, -ла
нѣдити <sup>4</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to offer</i>	нѣдѣм	нѣдио, -ла
ѣправѣти <sup>5</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to mend, to repair; to send some one</i>	ѣправѣм	ѣправио, -ла
ѣставиѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> and <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to leave</i>	ѣставѣм	ѣставио, -ла
пѣлити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to light</i> <sup>6</sup>	пѣлѣм	пѣлио, -ла
пѣмѣтиѣти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to remember</i>	пѣмѣтѣм	пѣмѣтио, -ла
пѣлатѣти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to pay</i> (cf. p. 144)	пѣлатѣм	пѣлатѣо, -ла

<sup>1</sup> Past part. pass. : зѣбрѣѣно.

<sup>2</sup> +се = *to appear* (literally).

<sup>3</sup> предлѣжити (*pfv.*), предлѣгати (*ipfv.*) = *to propose, to suggest*.

<sup>4</sup> *Pfv.* пѣнудити.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. ѣправѣти се = *to recover from an illness*.

<sup>6</sup> *Pfv.* запѣлити.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
пòздрави́ти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to greet</i> , <sup>1</sup> <i>to salute</i>	пòздрави́м	пòздравио-, -ла
пòправи́ти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) <sup>2</sup> = <i>to correct</i> , <i>to improve</i>	пòправи́м	пòправио, -ла
пра̀ти́ти <sup>3</sup> ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to accom-</i> <i>pany, to escort</i>	пра̀ти́м	пра̀тио, -ла
пра̀ви́ти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to make</i>	пра̀ви́м	пра̀вио, -ла
прево̀ди́ти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to trans-</i> <i>late</i> <sup>4</sup> (cf. p. 123)	прево̀ди́м	прево̀дио, -ла
при́ми́ти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to receive, to</i> <i>get, to accept</i>	при́ми́м	при́мио, -ла
пру̀жи́ти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to pass, to</i> <i>hand</i>	пру̀жи́м	пру̀жио, -ла
пу̀сти́ти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to let go</i> (cf. p. 144)	пу̀сти́м	пу̀стио, -ла
пу̀ши́ти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to smoke</i>	пу̀ши́м	пу̀шио, -ла
ра̀ди́ти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to do, to work</i> <sup>5</sup>	ра̀ди́м	ра̀дио, -ла
свр̀ши́ти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) <sup>6</sup> = <i>to finish</i> (trans.)	свр̀ши́м	свр̀шио, -ла
сѐде́ти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) <sup>7</sup> = <i>to sit</i> (cf. p. 130)	сѐди́м	сѐдео, -ла
скòчи́ти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to give a jump</i>	скòчи́м	скòчио, -ла
слòми́ти ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = <i>to break (in</i> <i>two)</i>	слòми́м (or слòми́жём)	слòмио, -ла
сти́де́ти се ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to be</i> <i>ashamed</i> <sup>8</sup>	сти́ди́м се	сти́део, -ла
те́жи́ти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to weigh</i> (in- trans.)	те́жи́м	те́жио, -ла
т́рпи́ти ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = <i>to suffer</i> <sup>9</sup>	т́рпи́м	т́рпео, -ла

<sup>1</sup> A greeting is пòздрав.

<sup>2</sup> *Ipfv.* пòправѣ́ати, Class IV. Cf. има́ти пра̀во = *to be right*,  
нема́ти пра̀во = *to be wrong*; *correct* (adj.) is та́чно, cf. p. 183.

<sup>3</sup> пра̀ти́лац (cf. p. 17) = *a guide*.

<sup>4</sup> *Pfv.* = превѣ́сти, превѣ́дем, превѣо; *a translation* =  
прево̀д.

<sup>5</sup> *Pfv.* ура̀ди́ти.

<sup>6</sup> *Ipfv.* свр̀ша́вати, Class III, 3; + се : intrans.

<sup>7</sup> For *ipfv.* cf. p. 134.

<sup>8</sup> Cf. p. 41.

<sup>9</sup> Also па̀ти́ти and стра̀да́ти, cf. p. 144.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
трòшити ( <i>ipfv.</i> <sup>1</sup> ) = to spend (money)	трòшїм	трòшио, -ла
трчати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to run	трчїм	трчао, -ла
ћўтати ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to be silent	ћўтїм	ћўтао, -ла
ўдарити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to strike, to hit	ўдарїм	ўдаріо, -ла
ўхватити ( <i>pfv.</i> ) = to seize, to catch <sup>2</sup>	ўхватїм	ўхватио, -ла
хвãлити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to praise	хвãлїм	хвãліо, -ла
чїнити ( <i>ipfv.</i> ) = to do <sup>3</sup>	чїнїм	чїніо, -ла

## CHAPTER 24

## THE PAST TENSE (PERFECT OR COMPOUND PAST)

THIS tense is formed by means of the short present forms of бїти = to be, and the past participle active of any verb. This participle is formed by cutting off the last two letters of the infinitive and substituting in the sing. -o for the *masc.*, -ла for the *fem.*, -ло for the *neut.*; in the pl. -ли for the *masc.*, -ле for the *fem.*, -ла for the *neut.*, e.g.

їмати : їмао (*m.*), їмала (*f.*), їмало (*n.*) } Sing.  
їмали (*m.*), їмале (*f.*), їмала (*n.*) } Pl.

If the stem ends in a consonant, a is put before o for the *masculine*, e.g.

мòћи, stem мог- : мòгао (*m.*), мòгла (*f.*), мòгло (*n.*).  
мòгли (*m.*), мòгле (*f.*), мòгла (*n.*).

If the stem ends in д or т, these drop before o (or л), e.g.  
крãсти, stem крад- : крãо (*m.*), крãла (*f.*), крãло (*n.*).  
крãли (*m.*), крãле (*f.*), крãла (*n.*).

плèсти, stem плет- : плèо (*m.*), плèла (*f.*), плèло (*n.*).  
плèли (*m.*), плèле (*f.*), плèла (*n.*).

<sup>1</sup> *Pfv.* потрòшити ; expenses = трòшкови.

<sup>2</sup> to catch a train = у . . вòз ; to catch cold, cf. p. 140.

<sup>3</sup> *Pfv.* учїнити.

The past participle of *їћи* = *to go* is *їшао*, *їшла*, *їшло* (derived from an old stem, *шед-*, prefixed with the *и-* of *їћи*); the same with all its compounds, e.g. *дòшао*, *дòшла*, *дòшло*, from *дóћи* (cf. p. 123); *рáсти* = *to grow* (cf. p. 102) has *рáстао*, *рáсла*, *рáсло* (orig. *рáст+ти*, *рáести*); from verbs of Class V, 2, e.g. *жівети*, *вїдети*, *вòлети*, pasts are formed, and frequently used, from the present stem as well as from the inf. stem, viz. *жівю* or *жівео*, *вїдно* or *вїдео*, &c.

It has been already explained (p. 60) that this tense may correspond in meaning to the perfect, the pluperfect, the aorist, or the imperfect in English, regard of course being paid to the aspect of the verb.

Many verbs of Class II omit the syllable *-ну-* in all forms of the past except the masc. sing., cf. p. 107 and chap. 29.

In this tense, if the pronoun is retained, then the participle comes last; if it is omitted, it comes first.

The (perfect) past tense of all verbs is formed in this way.

### *Singular*

1. *јâ сâм їмао* (*їмала f.*),  
or, more frequently, *їмао* (*їмала*) *сâм* = *I have had*
2. *тї си їмао* (*їмала f.*) ,, *їмао* (*їмала*) *си* = *thou hast had*
3. *он је їмао* ,, *їмао је* = *he has had*  
*она је їмала* ,, *їмала је* = *she has had*  
*òно је їмало* ,, *їмало је* = *it has had*

### *Plural*

- мї смо їмали* (*їмале f.*),  
or, more frequently, *їмали* (*їмале*) *смо* = *we have had*
- вї сте їмали* (*їмале f.*) ,, *їмали* (*їмале*) *сте* = *you have had*

òни су ìмали,	or, more frequently, ìмали су	}	= <i>they have had</i>
òне су ìмале	,, ìмале су		
òна су ìмала	,, ìмала су		

When the verb is reflexive the pronoun *се* is placed as follows (cf. also p. 207):

jà сам се вратио or вратио сам се = *I (have) returned.*

вii сте се прèварили or прèварили сте се = *you are wrong, you have made a mistake.*

The interrogative forms are :

jà ли (òн) ìмао ? = *has he had ?*

jàсте ли вii ìмали (ìмале, *f.*) ? = *have you had ?*

Or :

дà ли је (òна) ìмала ? = *has she had ?*

дà ли су (òни) ìмали ? = *have they had ?*

Or with *заp*, cf. p. 33 :

зàp сте (ви) ìмали (ìмале) ? = *have you really had ?*

зàp су (òне) ìмале ? ! = *have they (f.) really had ?*

Or in the form of an assumption, cf. p. 33.

The negative forms are :

(jà) нiсам ìмао (ìмала *f.*) = *I have not had.*

(ви) нисте ìмали (ìмале *f.*) = *you have not had.*

The negative-interrogative forms :

ниемо ли (ми) ìмали (ìмале *f.*) ? = *have we not had ?*

нису ли (òни) ìмали ? = *have they not had ?*

Or more emphatic forms with *заp*, e.g.

зàp нисте (ви) ìмали (ìмале *f.*) = *haven't you really had ?*

зàp нису (òне) ìмале ? ! = *haven't they (f.) really had ?*

With interrogative pronouns and adverbs, *кòлико*, *гдè*, *кад*, &c., the interrogative particles are omitted, cf. p. 34.



## CHAPTER 25

## THE PREPOSITIONS

(AND THE USE OF THE VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED)

THE prepositions are both simple and compound ; the first govern one, two, or three cases, the second only the genitive.

I. The following are the simple prepositions which govern only one case, e.g.

## 1. The genitive :

бѣз = <i>without</i>	ѡд = ( <i>away</i> ) <i>from, since</i> (often merely = <i>of</i> )
блѣзу <sup>1</sup> = <i>near</i>	ѡко = (1) <i>round</i> , <sup>4</sup> (2) <i>about</i> (= <i>approximately</i> )
вѣн = <i>outside</i>	ѡсим = <i>except, besides</i>
вѣше <sup>2</sup> = <i>above</i> (= <i>beyond</i> )	пѡред = <i>beside, alongside</i>
вѣх = <i>above</i> (= <i>over</i> )	пѡслѣ <sup>1</sup> = <i>after</i>
дѡ = (1) <i>as far as, until</i> , (2) <i>close to</i> , (3) <i>before</i>	прѣ <sup>1</sup> = <i>before</i>
дѡж = <i>alongside</i>	прѣко = <i>over, across</i>
зѡдѡг = <i>on account of</i>	прѡтѣв = <i>against</i>
ѣз = <i>out of, from</i>	рѡди = <i>for the sake of</i>
кѡд = <i>at</i> ( <i>the house of</i> ), <i>with, by</i> ( <i>near</i> )	рѡзма = <i>besides, except</i>
крѡј <sup>3</sup> = <i>alongside</i>	сѣм = ѡсим
мѣсто = <i>instead of</i>	спрѡм = <i>in front of</i>
нѣже <sup>2</sup> = <i>below</i>	срѣд = <i>in the middle of</i>
	сѣпрот = <i>opposite</i>

2. The dative : к (or ка) = *towards, to*.

<sup>1</sup> Can also be used adverbially.

<sup>2</sup> Are also comparative adjectives and adverbs.

<sup>3</sup> As a *subst.* = (1) *the edge*, (2) *the end*.

<sup>4</sup> *Round* (*adj.*) = окрѣго.

## 3. The accusative :

к̀р̀òз = (1) *through*, (2) *in* (of time)    н̀н̀з = *down*

м̀н̀м̀о = *past, in spite of*            ÿ̀з = *up (near, at)*

## 4. The locative :

п̀р̀й = *by, near.*

п̀р̀е́м̀а = *towards, opposite, in contrast to.*

## II. The following prepositions govern two cases :

## 1. The gen. or inst. :

с̀ or с̀а (+ gen.) = (1) *from off*, (2) *because of*, (+ inst.) = *with*.

## 2. The acc. or inst. :

м̀е́ж̀у (+ acc.) = *between* (motion towards) ; (+ inst.) = *between* (rest at), *amongst*.

п̀а́д (+ acc.) = *above or over* (motion towards) ; (+ inst.) = *above or over* (rest at).

п̀о́д (+ acc.) = *under* (motion towards) ; (+ inst.) = *under* (rest at).

п̀р̀е́д (+ acc.) = *in front of, before* (motion towards) ; (+ inst.) = *in front of* (rest at).

## 3. The acc. or loc. :

н̀а́ (+ acc.) = (1) *on to*, (2) *for* (of time) ; (+ loc.) = *on, also at*.

ò (+ acc.) = *on, against* ; (+ loc.) = *about, concerning*.

п̀о́ (+ acc.) = *for* (to fetch), *for* (of time), *at the rate of* ; (+ loc.) = *about, over, after, according to*.

## III. The following prepositions govern three cases :

## 1. The gen., acc., or inst. :

з̀а́ (+ gen.) = *in the time of* ; (+ acc.) = *for* (also *in, at, behind, by*, cf. p. 160) ; (+ inst.) = *behind* (following after).

2. The gen., acc., or loc. :

ÿ (+ gen.) = *in the possession of* ; (+ acc.) = *into, at* (of time of day) ; (+ loc.) = *in*.

The following compound prepositions govern only the genitive :

ÿза = <i>behind, from behind</i>	насре́д = <i>in the middle, into</i>
ÿзван <sup>1</sup> = <i>outside</i>	<i>the middle of</i>
ÿзме́жу = <i>between, amongst,</i>	поврѣх = <i>over</i>
<i>from amongst</i>	пѣкрај = <i>alongside</i>
ÿзнад = <i>over, above</i>	пѣпѣт = <i>towards</i>
ÿспод = <i>under, from under</i>	посре́д = <i>насре́д</i>
ÿспред = <i>from before</i>	сни́же <sup>2</sup> = <i>from below</i>
кросре́д = <i>right through</i>	спѣред = <i>beside</i>
наврѣх = <i>on the top of</i>	уврѣх = <i>on the top of</i>
на́крај = <i>on or at or on to or</i>	ÿкрај = <i>пѣкрај</i>
<i>to the end</i>	умѣсто = <i>instead of</i>
на̀около <sup>2</sup> = <i>all round</i>	ÿна̀около <sup>2</sup> = <i>на̀около</i>
	усре́д = <i>in the very middle of</i>

Examples (N. B. the prepositions often lose the accent when not emphasized, cf. also p. 22) :

### With the Genitive

I, 1. без нѡвца = *without money* ; без мѣне = (1) *without me*, (2) *in my absence* <sup>3</sup> ; без ÿчега = *without anything* ; бѣз обзѣра на . . . = *without regard to . . .*

блѣзу вѣроши = *near the town* ; блѣзу мѡра = *near the sea* ; as comp. блѣже мѣне = *nearer (to) me* ; as superl., usually + dat. : на́блѣже мѣни = *nearest (to) me*.

ван кѣ́ке = *outside the house* ; ван се́бе = *beside oneself* ;

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *изванрѣдан* = *extraordinary*.

<sup>2</sup> Can also be used adverbially.

<sup>3</sup> *Absence* = ѡсу́ство, на ѡсу́ству = *on leave, on holiday*.

ста̀нујем ван ва̀роши = *I live out of town* ; (x)а̀јдемо ван ва̀роши = *let us go out of town*.

вѝше : на̀ша ку̀ћа је вѝше ва̀ше = *our house is above (behind) yours*.

вр̀х : во̀да је вр̀х мѐне = *the water is just over my head*.

до̀ : (1) о̀станите до кра̀ја о̀вога мѐсеца = *stay till the end of this month* ; ѝдите до кра̀ја о̀ве ўлице = *go to the end of this street* ; (2) сѐдите до мѐне = *sit close to me* ; о̀н ста̀нује до̀ на̀с = *he lives next to us* ; (3) до̀ђите до кра̀ја о̀ве нѐдеље = *come before the end of this week*.

ду̀ж рѐке = *along the river*.

збо̀г тога = *on account of that* ; збо̀г њѐга = (1) *because of him, on account of him*, (2) *for his sake* ; збо̀г по̀сла = *on account of work*.

ѝз : (x)а̀јдемо ѝз ку̀ће = *let us go out of the house* ; до̀бно сам пѝсмо ѝз Ср̀бије = *I have got a letter from Serbia* ; по̀реклом ѝз Да̀лма̀ције = *(he is) by origin from Dalmatia* ; ўзѐли су се ѝз љу̀бави = *they married (lit. they took each other) from love*.

ко̀д на̀с = *'chez nous,' at our house, in our country* ; ко̀д ку̀ће = *at home*.

кра̀ј пу̀та = *alongside the road*.

мѐсто мѐне = *instead of me*.

нѝже : ва̀ша ку̀ћа је нѝже на̀ше = *your house is below ours*.

о̀д : до̀бно сам пѝсмо од њѐга = *I have got a letter from him* ; ѝдите од мѐне = *go away from me* ; од прѝлике (or as one word, отпрѝлике) = *approximately* ; ўмро је од ра̀не = *he died from a wound* ; од ра̀дости = *from joy* ; од ту̀ге = *from sorrow* ; од Бео̀града до Нѝша = *from Belgrade to Nish* ; о̀вде сам од почѣтка о̀ве го̀дине = *I have been (lit. I am) here since the beginning of this year* ; дѐвојка од осамнаест го̀ди́на = *a girl of 18* ; ква̀ка од вра̀та = *the handle of the*

door ; хàллина од свíле = *a dress of silk* ; од чèга је òво ? = *what is this made of?* мýрис од рýжа = (1) *rose-scent*, (2) *the smell of roses* ; òвāј шèшпīр је бòдлн од тòга = *this hat is better than that* (cf. p. 88) ; јèдан òд вāс = *one of you* ; тò нìје лèпо òд вāс = *that is not nice of you* ; јèдан од òвīх лýдī = *one of these men*.

око кýће је врт = *round the house is a garden* ; око рýчка = *about lunch-time* ; око трпī<sup>1</sup> сàта = *about three o'clock* ; йма око двáдесет гòдīнā = *he (or she) is (lit. has) about 20 (years old)*.

осим мèне нīкога нìје бíло = *there was nobody (there) except me* ; осим (or сem) тòга = *besides that*.

поред шýме тèче рéка = *beside the forest flows a river* ; поред тòга = осим тòга ; стāните поред мèне = *stand next me*.

после вèчере = *after supper* ; после двè<sup>1</sup> гòдине = *after two years* ; после нèколико дāнā = *after several days* ; после свèга што је бíло = *after all*<sup>2</sup> *that has happened*. (N.B. послепòдне = *the afternoon* can also be used = 'in the afternoon' and as *this afternoon* : òвò послепòдне.)

прè<sup>1</sup> двè гòдине (двā дāна, нèколико нèдèлā, месéци) = *two years (two days, several weeks, months) ago* (lit. *before . . .*) ; пре тòга = *before that* ; дòшао је прè њè = *he came before her* (sc. *before she did*) ; пре свèга = *above all*. (N.B. прè подне = *the forenoon* can also be used = 'in the morning' and as *this morning* : òвò препòдне.)

преко пòља = *through (across) the field* ; преко брда (планīне) = *over (across) the hill (mountain)*, sc. either *motion across* or *position beyond* ; прèђимо преко рéке = *let us go across the river* (sc. either by boat or across a bridge) ;

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 93.

<sup>2</sup> 'After all' = *and yet* must be rendered by the conjunction йпāк.

прѣко моста (or кѹприје) = *across the bridge*; прѣко пѹта, *across the road, over the way, opposite*; била сам у Србији прѣко (or више од) двѣ гѡдине<sup>1</sup> (двѣ мѣсѣцѣ) = *I (fem.) was in Serbia more than two years (two months)*, N.B. *I have been in Serbia* would be ја сам у Србији већ (already) двѣ гѡдине (гѡдину данѣ = *one year*<sup>1</sup>), or има двѣ гѡдине како сам у Србији; има двѣ гѡдине како сам била (or нисам била) у Србији = *it is two years since I was in Serbia*.

прѡтив: он ради против мене = *he is working against me*; имате ли штѡ (or штѡгод) против тѡга = *have you anything against that (= any objection)*.

ради Бѡга = *for God's sake*; тѡга ради = *on account of that*.

рѣзма = *ѡсим is seldom used*.

срѣд = *пѡсред, cf. p. 153*.

сѹпрот наше кѹће = *opposite our house*.

### With the Dative

I, 2. к: дѡђите к мѣни = *come to me*; ѡтишао је ка реци = *he has gone towards the river*; ѡво је пѹт ка Скопљу = *this is the road to Skoplje*.

### With the Accusative

I, 3. кроз вѣрош (сѣло, шѹму, Србију) = *through the town (village, forest, Serbia)*; кроз мѣсец данѣ<sup>1</sup> = *in a month's time*.

мимо кѹће = *past the house*; мимо вѣше вѡље = *contrary to your wishes (вѡља f., lit. = will)*; мимо нашег очекивања = *contrary to our expectation*.

низ реку (брдо) = *down stream (hill)*; сѹзе су јој текле

<sup>1</sup> But N.B. више од гѡдину (*acc.*) данѣ (*gen. pl.*) = *more than a year (of days; this is a very common Serbian colloquialism)*; више од мѣсец (or недељу) данѣ = *more than a month (or week)*.

НИЗ ЛИ́ЦЕ = *tears were streaming down her face* ; НИЗ ДЛА́КУ = *with the grain*, lit. and fig.

УЗ РЕ́КУ (БРѢДО) = *up stream (hill)* ; УЗ ДЛА́КУ = *against the grain*, lit. and fig. ; СТА́НИ УЗ МѢНЕ (OR Ё́ЗА МЕ) = *stand close to me* ; ОН ТѢ РА́ДИ МѢНИ УЗ ПРѢКО́С (OR У ПРѢКО́С) = *he is doing that to spite me* ; ШТА́ ПИ́ЈЕТЕ УЗ ЈЕ́ЛО ? = *what do you drink at meals ?* РА́МЕ УЗ РА́МЕ = *shoulder to shoulder* ; БО́РИТИ СЕ УЗ НЕ́КОГА = *to fight on behalf of (and with) anybody* ; Ё́З ТѢ = *in addition to that*.

### With the Locative

I, 4. ПРИ БРѢ́ГУ = *at the foot of the hill* ; ПРИ ВѢ́ЧЕРИ (РУ́ЧКУ, ДО́РУЧКУ) = *at supper (lunch, breakfast)* ; ПРИ СТО́ЛУ = *at table (eating)* ; НЕ́МАМ НѢ́ВЦА ПРИ СЕ́БИ = *I have no money on me* ; ПРИ СВѢ́М(У) ТО́М(Е) = *in spite of all that*.

ПРЕ́МА : ОН СЕ́ДИ ПРЕМА МѢНИ = *he is sitting opposite me* ; И́ДИТЕ ПРА́ВО ПРЕМА ОНѢ́Ј КУ́ЋИ = *go straight towards that house* ; ПРЕМА ТО́МЕ = *according to that or in contrast to that*.

### With the Genitive and Instrumental

II, 1. С OR СА́, (1) + gen. : ДО́ШАО ЈЕ С ПИ́ЈАЦЕ (С ВА́ШАРА) = *he has come from the market (the fair)* ; СИ́ШЛИ СУ С БРѢ́ДА (ПЛА́НИНЕ) = *they have come down from the hill (mountain)* ; С О́ВЕ (О́НЕ) СТРА́НЕ = *from this (that) side* ; С ЈЕ́ДНЕ (ДРУ́ГЕ) СТРА́НЕ = (1) *on one (the other) side*, (2) *on the one (the other) hand* ; С ДРА́ГЕ ВѢ́ЛЕ = *with great pleasure* ; С ДѢ́СНЕ (ЛѢ́ВЕ) РУ́КЕ = *on the right (left) hand* ; С ТО́ГА = *from (=for) that*, sc. *reason*<sup>1</sup> ; ———, (2) + inst. : СА́ МНОМ = *with me* ; С ВА́МА = *with you* ; СА ЗАДОВО́ЛЬСТВОМ = *with pleasure* ; С ТУ́ГОМ = *with sorrow* ; С ПРА́ВОМ = *with right* ; С КО́ЈѢМ СЕ ОЖЕ́ННО ? = *whom did he marry ?* С ЈЕ́ДНОМ Ё́НГЛЕ́СКИНОМ =

<sup>1</sup> A (or the) reason is РАЗЛОГ OR Ё́ЗРОК.

an *Englishwoman* ; шта̀ ћете (sc. радити) стѣм ? = *what are you going to do with that* ? N.B. When the instrument is denoted instrumental case by itself is used, e.g. ја пишем перѡм а вѣ олѡвком = *I am writing with a pen and you with a pencil* ; с чѣтири пријатеља = *with five friends* (N.B. numerals in such cases are not declined, cf. p. 93).

### With the Accusative and Instrumental

II, 2. међу, (1) + acc. : мајка ђе међу децу = *the mother went amongst the children* ; мет(н)и ђву књигу међу ђне = *put this book amongst those* ; ———, (2) + inst. : ђн је најбољи међу вама = *he is the best amongst you (=of you)* ; живела сам годину ѣ по (данā) међу Србима = *I (f.) lived a year and a half amongst the Serbs*.

над, (1) + acc. : наднѣсите се над умиваѡник = *bend over the basin* ; ———, (2) + inst. : над нама је (а)ѣроплāн = *there is an aeroplane over us* ; над њѣм (ог од њѣга, cf. p. 89) нѣма бѡљег чѡвека = *there is no man better than he* ; кѡ стāнује над вама (ог више вāс) ? = *who lives over you* ?

пѡд, (1) + acc. : мет(н)ите ми јаѡтук пѡд главу = *put a pillow<sup>1</sup> under my head* ; узѣти кућу под кирију<sup>2</sup> = *to take a house on (lit. under) a lease* ; пѡд старѡст = *in one's old age* ; ———, (2) + inst. : пѡд њѣм је дѡбар кѡњ = *there is a good horse under him* ; под владом ђвога краља = *under the rule of this king* ; под чѣјѣм ѣменом = *under whose name* ; под заштитѡм, под влашћу + gen. = *under the protection, the power of . . .*

пред, (1) + acc. : спѡстите цѣпеле пред врата = *put the shoes in front of the door* ; он глѣда предā се = *he is looking in front of himself* ; дѡђите пред вече = *come just before*

<sup>1</sup> Also = *cushion*.

<sup>2</sup> најмити (Class V, 1, ipfv.) = *to hire anything or any one* ; дати под кирију or у најам = *to let (on hire)*.



*evening (towards)*; пред рúчак = *just before lunch*; мèt(н)ите тò пред мèне (or прèдā ме) = *put it in front of me*; ———, (2) + inst. : прèдā мном нèма нйшта = *there is nothing in front of me*; нèко стòји прèд кућом = *some one is standing in front of the house*.

### With the Accusative and Locative

II, 3. на, (1) + acc. : мèt(н)ите тò на стò = *put it on the table*; одговòрићу на нèгово писмо = *I shall answer your letter*; на здравље ! = *to your health!* тò је на вāшу штèту (кòрпèст) = *that is to your disadvantage (advantage)*; дāјèm вам òво на пòклòн<sup>1</sup> = *I give you this as a present*; дòћи ћу на нèдељу дāнā = *I shall come for a week*; на лето, на зйму = *for the coming summer, winter*; на тāј нāчин = (1) *in that manner*, (2) *in that event*; изāћи нèкоме на сýсрет = (1) *to go to meet any one*; на брзу рýку = *quickly*; пýтујемо на Нйш за Бèòград = *we are travelling to Belgrade via Nish*; (2) *to help*; ———, (2) + loc. : књйге су на стòлу = *the books are on the table*; на кйши = *in the rain*; хвāла вам на томе = *thank you for that*; на крају крајèвā = *at long last (lit. at end of ends)*; нйхова кўћа је на крају вāроши = *their house is at the end of the town*; Бèòград је на Дýнаву и на Сāви = *Belgrade is on the Danube and on the Save*; кāко се кāже на српскòм, cf. p. 42.

ò, (1) + acc. : òбесите<sup>2</sup> кàпýт о чивйлуц = *hang your coat on the peg (or hook)*; ———, (2) + loc. : о чèму гòво-рйте ? = *what are you speaking about?* пйтаћу га о тòме = *I will ask him about that*.

пò, (1) + acc. : пòштò су јāја ? — по дèсет пāрā = *how much are the eggs?* — 10 paras each; дòшао сам пò вāс = *I have*

<sup>1</sup> поклòнити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1) = *to present, to make a present of*.

<sup>2</sup> *Ipfv.* is вèшати, Class IV; *to hang*, intrans., is вйснити, Class V, 1.

called for you ; ѿмам по̀сла по цѣо дѣн = *I have work for the whole day* ; ———, (2) + loc. : разишли су се по вѣроши = *they dispersed all over the town* ; вѣди се по њѣму да је бѣлестан = *one can see by his looks that he is ill* ; по зѣкону = *according to the law* ; по мѣме мѣшлѣѣњу = *in my opinion* ; по рѣду = *one after the other, in turn* ; по прѣвилу = *by rule* ; по свѣј прѣлици = *in all probability*.

### With the Genitive, Accusative, and Instrumental

III, 1. зѣ, (1) + gen. : за влѣде цѣра Душана = *in the reign of tsar Dushan* ; ———, (2) + acc. : сѣд(н)ите за стѣ = *sit down to table* ; сѣнце је зѣшло зѣ брдо = *the sun has gone behind the hill* ; ѿма ли за мѣне пѣсамѣ ? = *are there any letters for me* ? дрѣжите ме зѣ рѣку = *hold me by the hand* ; бѣћу гѣтов за нѣдељу дѣнѣ = *I shall be ready<sup>1</sup> in a week's time* ; за врѣме ѣвога лѣта = *in the course of or during this summer* (lit. *for the time of*) ; жѣ ћу плѣтити зѣ вѣс = *I shall pay for you* ; знѣте ли вѣ зѣ тѣ ? = *do you know of that* ? чѣо сам за њѣга = *I have heard about (of) him* ; ѣво ћу ѣзѣти (чѣвати) за сѣбе = *I shall take (keep<sup>2</sup>) this for myself* ; жѣ вас смѣтрам за прѣјѣтеља = *I look on you as a friend* ; жѣ ли ѣво пѣт за Бѣград ? = *is this the road to (for) Belgrade* ? (cf. p. 156) ; за кѣга ће се ѣдати ? = *whom is she going to marry* ? (cf. p. 157) ; за жѣднѣг Срѣбина = *a Serbian* ; ———, (3) + inst. : ѣни су вѣћ за стѣлом = *they are already at table* ; нѣко ѣде зѣ нама = *some one is following us* ; зѣ кѣм је (sc. ѣдѣта ? = *to whom* (lit. *behind*) *is she* (sc. *married*) ? за жѣднѣм ѣнглѣзом = *to an Englishman*.

III, 2. ѣ, (1) + gen. : у кѣга (more usually код кѣга)

<sup>1</sup> Another word for *ready* is спрѣман.

<sup>2</sup> *To keep doing anything*, &c., must be rendered by the adverbs непрѣстано or стѣлно (= *ceaselessly*) and a verb ; *to keep* (to hold, to maintain) + дрѣжати (Class V, 2), cf. p. 145.

сте тражили пѡмѡћ ? = *from whom did you ask help?* (lit. *seek*) ; ———, (2) + acc. : (x)ајдемо у вѡрош = *let us go into the town* ; (x)ајдемо у мѡју сѡбу = *let us go into my room* ; у ђно дѡба<sup>1</sup> = *at that time* ; ѡ лето, ѡ зѡму, ѡ јесен, ѡ пролеће = *in the summer, winter, autumn, spring* ; у нѡдељу = *on Sunday* ; у понѡдеоник = *on Monday, &c., cf. p. 136* ; нѡша дѡца ѡдѡ ѡ школу = (1) *our children go to school*, (2) . . . *are on their way to school* ; ѡ корѡк = *at walking pace* ; кѡда пѡтујѡте ? — у (or за) Сѡлѡн, ѡ (or за) Србѡју = *where are you travelling to?* — *To Salonica, to Serbia* ; ———, (3) + loc. : гдѡ жѡвите ? — у Дѡбрѡвнику = *where do you live?* — *At Ragusa* ; у кѡјѡј ѡлици стѡнујѡте ? — у Макѡдѡнској = *in which street do you live?* — *In Macedonia Street* ; ѡмѡ ли купѡтило у ѡвѡм хѡтелу ? = *is there a bathroom in this hotel?* у кѡме је вѡку тѡ бѡло ? = *in which century was that?* у ѡстѡлом = *for the rest, for that matter* ; у мѡм прѡсуству (*neut.*) = *in my presence*.

Of the compound prepositions *ѡза*, *ѡзмеђу*, and *ѡспѡд* are especially common, e.g.

ѡзѡ куће је ѡзвор = *behind the house is a spring (of water)* ; нѡше ѡмѡње је ѡза сѡла = *our property is beyond (behind) the village*.

ѡзмеђу Бѡграда и Нѡша ѡмѡ мнѡго стѡнѡца = *there are many stations between Belgrade and Nish* ; ѡзмеђу нѡс нѡ је бѡло нѡчега = *there was nothing between us* ; сѡдели смо ѡзмеђу прѡзѡра и врѡта = *we were sitting between the window and the door*.

ѡспѡд рѡкѡ = *under (one's) arm (also = privately)* ; ѡспѡд свѡкѡ цѡне = *below any price, sc. worthless*.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 37.

## Vocabulary

универзитѣт = <i>university</i>	надзор = <i>supervision</i>
виноград = <i>vineyard</i>	ѹспомена = <i>souvenir, recollection</i>
штампарија = <i>printing-press</i>	предавање = <i>lecture</i>
клавѣр = <i>piano</i>	књижевност = <i>literature</i>
рѹбље = <i>linen (= clothes)</i> .	брѹј = <i>number</i>
пушка = <i>rifle</i>	брѹга = <i>worry</i>
тѣнис = <i>tennis</i>	ѹрање = <i>ploughing</i>
непријатељ = <i>enemy</i>	грѹзница = <i>fever</i>
нокат = <i>nail (of hand or foot),</i>	страна = <i>side</i>
<i>claw</i>	телеграм or дѣпеша = <i>tele-</i>
рог = <i>horn</i>	<i>gram</i>
ливада = <i>meadow</i>	ѹморан = <i>tired</i>
рѹжа = <i>rose</i>	дѣван = <i>beautiful, lovely</i>
плѹг = <i>plough</i>	дѹвѹлан = <i>sufficient</i>
машина = (1) <i>machine,</i> (2)	хладан = <i>cold</i>
<i>matches</i>	ѹжасан = <i>terrible, awful</i>
дѹписница = <i>post-card</i>	ѹредан = <i>tidy</i>
говеда = <i>horned cattle</i>	државни = <i>belonging to the state</i>
ѹвца = <i>sheep</i>	рѣдѹван = <i>regular</i>
крѹва = <i>cow</i>	цѣо, цѣла = <i>whole</i>
мѹче = <i>kitten</i>	страшан = <i>horrible</i>
лѣптѣр = <i>butterfly</i>	млад, млѹда = <i>young</i>
рѹчак = <i>lunch</i>	тврѹд, тврѹда = <i>hard</i>
рѹчѹн = <i>bill</i>	дѣсни = <i>right-hand (adj.)</i>
предмет = <i>object, subject</i> <sup>1</sup>	лѣви = <i>left-hand (adj.)</i>
вѣтар = <i>wind</i>	пѹла, <i>num. = half</i>

## Reading Exercise

The verbs of the second group, cf. p. 143.

1. Вечѣрас мѹрам да идѣм у Бѣоград. 2. Свѣрате ли на клавѣру?—Свѣрам, ѹли нѣ дѹбро. 3. Їгрѣте ли тѣнис?—Нѣ (играм). 4. Понѣкад ѹвече читѹмо до дѣсѣт сѹти. 5. Штѹ тѹ глѣдѹтѣ?—Глѣдѹм ѹно кѹче кѹко се чгрѹ са мѹчетѹм. 6. Мѹј ѹтац спѹвѹ врлѹ рѣѹво. 7.

<sup>1</sup> *The subject of a state is подѹник.*

Зна́те ли гдѣ́ је хо́тел X?—У прво́ј љу́ници с дѣ́сне стра́не. 8. Ми́ (се) шѣ́тамо р̀ано љ̀утру дѣ́ж; пу́та по́ред на́шег виногра́да. 9. Ми́ ни́када не ру́чавам̀о прѣ́ двана́ест са́ти. 10. Ка́д вечѣ́равате?—Ў́ осам са́ти. 11. Ве́ћ по́ла са́та ва́с че́кам шѣ́тају́ћи<sup>1</sup> го́ре до́ле. 12. Ка́ква предава́ња слѣ́шате на уни́верзитѣ́ту?—Из е́нглѣ́ске књи́жевно́сти. 13. Иза на́ше ку́ће је (ог њи́ма) ве́лика шу́ма у ко́јој ти́це пе́вају по це́о да́н. 14. Насре́д по́ља дѣ́ва стра́шан ве́тар. 15. Ка́д смо љ̀пољу́ ми́ са́ми ку́вам̀о ру́чак. 16. Сли́ка ли ва́ша се́стра?—Она́ не́, љ́ли мо́ј мла́ђи бра́т сли́ка. 17. О́ву ру́жу не мо́гу ва́м да́ти (ог . . . да́ вам да́м), о́во је љ̀спомена од мо́га при́јате́ља. 18. Ў́жинате ли ре́дѣ́вно?—Поне́кад не́. 19. Гдѣ́ се штáмпá ва́ша књи́га?—У др̀жавно́ј штампáрији. 20. Ма́јке но́ћу покрѣ́вају свѣ́ју де́цу. 21. Гдѣ́ је ва́ша се́стра?—Хва́та ле́птире у в́рту. 22. Два́ чо́века ко́рачају та́мо-а́мо испре́д на́ше ку́ће. 23. При́imate ли ка́кве но́вине?—При́мамо трѣ́је (cf. pp. 30, 95) (ог три́ брѣ́ја). 24. Мо́ј бра́т ни́шта ми не јáвља́ гдѣ́ је са́да. 25. Њѣ́гов бра́т не пла́ћа љ̀редно свѣ́је рачу́не. 26. Не́ пу́штајте де́цу ни́када без свѣ́га на́дзора. 27. Војни́ци пу́цају из пу́шака́. 28. Не́пријате́љ бе́га из се́ла и ва́роши. 29. Стра́шно је уби́јати љ̀уде. 30. Не́ треба́ бе́гати љ̀спред не́пријате́ља, не́го пу́цати на њѣ́га и на́падати га. 31. Да́нас не мо́гу ни ру́чати ни ве́черати, је́р се не о́сеќам до́бро.

The verbs of the first group, cf. p. 139.

32. Вдлови́ боду́ ро́гѣ́вима. 33. Ма́чка грѣ́бе но́ктима. 34. Са́мо р̀ђави љ̀уди кра́ду. 35. Хо́ћете ли да иде́мо вечѣ́ра́с на бре́г (ог брѣ́до)?—Не мо́гу, љ́мам мно́го по́сла. 36. На о́номе бре́гу ра́сте ди́вно цве́ќѣ́. 37. Ка́д љ̀мре́мо

<sup>1</sup> Present indeclinable participle, 'walking,' cf. p. 194.

брига немамо. 38. Умете ли да плетете чарапе?—Не умем, али моје сестре умеју. 39. Да ли ваши ученици довољно разумеју енглески?—Прилично. 40. Смете ли да пуца́те из пушке?—Смем, зашто не! 41. Наши сеља́ци не ору више плу́гом и воловима, него машином за орање. 42. Преду ли ва́ше сеља́нке?—Не. Код нас, у Србији, преду и сеља́нке и ма́чке. 43. Зашто зебеш напољу, зар ти није хладно?—Није. 44. Хоћу да седнем, ужасно сам уморан. 45. Често пу́та војници са́ми пе́ру своје рубље. 46. Не треба́ грести зу́бима тврде предме́те. 47. Не умем да му́зем кра́ве, али умем помало овце. 48. Тресе́ се као да је у грџници. 49. Гдѣда и овце па́су по зе́ленџ ливади.

#### Notes

15. ми́ са́ми = here *we ourselves*, but can also = *we alone*.  
 17. да́ти, cf. p. 111.  
 42. прѣсти, stem пред-, Class I, 1.  
     же́на прѣде вѣну = *a woman is spinning the wool*.  
     ма́чка прѣде = *the cat purrs*.  
 44. се́сти, stem сед-, the present tense се́днем, cf. p. 106.

#### English Sentences

1. We receive every day an English newspaper and a Serbian newspaper. 2. Do you read much?—I read two hours every evening. 3. Oxen and cows butt with their horns. 4. Why are you beating this unfortunate horse? 5. Some one is shouting for help. 6. Flowers wither very quickly when they have no water. 7. These poor children are very tired and are starving; their parents have no money. 8. Do you wash with hot or cold water? 9. What do you drink at meals? 10. Do you understand what I say? 11. Do you know how to milk cows? 12. I am cold. 13. This river flows very rapidly. 14. When you speak slowly I understand everything. 15. Whither does this road lead? 16. We lunch at 1 o'clock, have tea at half-past 4, and sup at 8. 17. You are mistaken,

this is not the road for Salonika. 18. What are these men building?—They are building a new railway. 19. I smoke twenty cigarettes every day. 20. Are you staying here long?—No, only four days. 21. These trees grow very quickly. 22. This man does not use enough soap. 23. We walk for an hour every evening. 24. This is the printing-press of our university; many books are printed here. 25. What are you doing? Are you not ashamed? 26. I do not remember what is the number of my room. 27. I do not sleep well in this hotel; people sing and talk and play on the piano the whole night. 28. He has fever and is lying in bed; the doctor says he is very ill. 29. Do you know whose cows and sheep these are which are grazing on this meadow? 30. We spend the summer in the village (=in the country) and the winter in the town.

## CHAPTER 26

## DEFINITIVE PRONOUNS

(AND THE USE OF THE VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED)

Sing. сѡв (*m.*), сѡѡ (*f.*), сѡѡ (*n.*) } = *all, the whole.*  
 Pl. сѡѡ (*m.*), сѡѡ (*f.*), сѡѡ (*n.*) }

сѡм, сѡма, сѡмо } = (1) *(one)self*, (2) *alone.*  
 сѡми, сѡме, сѡма }

ѡсти, ѡста, ѡсто } = *the same.*  
 ѡсти, ѡсте, ѡста }

мнѡги, мнѡга, мнѡго } = *many a, many.*  
 мнѡги, мнѡге, мнѡга }

дрѡги, дрѡга, дрѡго } = *(an)other (also = second).*  
 дрѡги, дрѡге, дрѡга }

сѡв (another form of which is вѡс) is declined like нѡш, cf. pp. 66 ff., gen. sing. сѡѡга, &c.; irr. gen. pl. сѡѡју.

сѡм is declined like мѡј, cf. p. 67, gen. sing. сѡмог(а). In the same way are declined ѡсти, gen. ѡстог(а), мнѡги, gen. мнѡгог(а), and дрѡги, gen. дрѡгог(а). ѡсти is always

preceded by a demonstrative pronoun, usually *tâj*, when it means *the same*; when it means *the same sort of* it is followed by *tâkav*, cf. p. 135. *One another* is rendered by *један друкруга*, but occasionally this meaning is covered by the reflexive verbs, cf. pp. 114 ff.

### Vocabulary

лърма = <i>noise</i>	срѣћа = <i>luck, happiness</i>
ражањ = <i>spit</i> (for roasting)	лѣто = <i>summer</i>
дрво = <i>tree</i>	зима = <i>winter</i>
прôleће = <i>spring</i> (of the year)	певѣн = <i>innocent</i>
јесѣн = <i>autumn</i>	пeverоватан = <i>improbable</i>
сòкѣк = <i>small street</i>	прљав = <i>dirty</i>
злато = <i>gold</i>	прòшли = <i>former, previous</i>
ракија = <i>brandy</i>	тѣжак, тѣшка = <i>heavy, diffi-</i>
сáвет = (1) <i>council</i> , (2) <i>advice</i> <sup>1</sup>	<i>cult</i>
истѣћи ( <i>pfv.</i> , Class I, 1) = <i>to flow out</i>	òгрејати се ( <i>pfv.</i> , Class III, 2) = <i>to warm oneself</i>
избрисати ( <i>pfv.</i> , Class III, 3) = <i>to wipe or brush</i>	умити се ( <i>pfv.</i> , Class III, 1) = <i>to wash (one's face)</i>
поквáрити ( <i>pfv.</i> , Class V, 1) = <i>to spoil</i>	

### Reading Exercise

The verbs of the first group, cf. p. 139.

1. Кад сте легли сѣнòћ ?—У једанаест сáти. 2. Свѣ вѣно је истѣкло из бурега. 3. Истòга дâна кáда је он дòшао мѣ смо бѣли у шуми и сѣкли дрва. 4. Јѣсте ли му кáзали да дòђе сѣтра у пòдне ?—Јесáм. 5. Дѣца су се тѣкла на сокáку у жáсно вѣчући. 6. Свѣ су ми кáзали да он нѣје уредан чòвек. 7. Нѣ мòрате свѣма кáзати свѣ што сте чѣли. 8. Двâ вѣлика кòња вѣкла су тѣшка кòла. 9. Јâ јој нѣсам рѣкао дâ сам вам дâо њѣну

<sup>1</sup> *To advise* is сáветовати (*pfv.*, Class III, 3).



књигу. 10. Ви сами сте ми рекли да им то не кажем. 11. Мoja сестра је добила исту такву хаљину. 12. Пси су синћ мнoгo лјали. 13. Јесте ли се дoвoљнo oгрејали?—Јесмо. 14. Ми смо му давали дoбрe савете нeкoликo пута. 15. Јучe смо јахали трћ сата. 16. Јесте ли избрисали лице и руке?—Нисам, нeмaм убрoс (oг пeшкир). 17. Знате ли кo је убио oвoгa чoвeкa?—Нe знам. 18. Прoшлoгa лeтa кaд смо били у сeлу умивали смо се увeк на рeци. 19. Умивате ли се вручкoм или (х)лaднoм вoдoм?—(Х)лaднoм. 20. Јесте ли се умили?—Јесмо. 21. Јесте ли икад пили рaкију?—Нисам никад. 22. Синћ је кiша стрaшно лiла. 23. Штa си oнo криo мaлoчac кaдa сам ушаo у твoју oбy?—Вашу књигу. 24. Чyо сам да су га вeзали па oнда били ; тo је нeвeрoвaтнo! 25. Прeкјучe смо пeкли јaгњe на рaжњу. 26. Свe штo (се) сија није златo. 27. Мнoги (љyди) су нeвинo стрaдали. 28. С тiм нoвцeм дрyги (чoвeк) би бiо зaдoвoљан. 29. Мнoгo путa сам ти рeкaо да нe слушаш рђавe савeтe. 30. Нису сви (љyди) истe срeћe. 31. Он је сaм пeвao свирајући на клавирy. 32. Он сaм рeкaо ми је да нe умe да свира. 33. Ви сами сте чули да oна пeвa врлo рђавo. 34. Јесте ли сами били у пoзoришту?—Нe, бiо сам са свoјoм сeстрoм. 35. Тy исту гoспoђy видeо сам сaмy синћ у oсам чaсoвa да шeтa пoрeд рeкe. 36. Мoј сaт је пoквaрeн (past participle passive).

## Notes

1. лeћи = *to go to bed, pfv.* 2. истeкло, from истeћи, stem тек-. 3. сeкли, from сeћи, stem сек-. 5. Present indeclinable participle from викати, cf. p. 140, 194. 13. *Pfv.*, cf. грeјати, *trans.*, or грeјати се, *reflex., ipfv.* 16. Cf. брiсати, *ipfv.* 18. прoшлoгa, cf. p. 40. 20. Cf. p. 142. 23. oнo = *that* is often inserted redundantly in such sentences, lit. 'what that thou wast hiding' = 'what was that which thou wast'.

24. *nă* = *and*. 31. Present indeclinable participle from *свѣ-  
пани*, cf. pp. 144, 194. 35. *чăc*, a synonym of *câr*, may also  
mean a (*short*) *while*, *cămy* : lit. *I saw her that she walks*.

### English Sentences

1. Who is making that awful noise ? Do they not know that we are tired and wish to sleep ? 2. This summer has been very hot, but last summer was cold. 3. I have never drunk brandy ; is it nice ? 4. What is this small street called ? 5. Why have you brought me a dirty towel ? 6. Why did you not wipe your feet (*hõre*) when you came into the house ? —We forgot. 7. Did you hear that noise ?—No, I did not. 8. When did you arrive ?—At 12 o'clock. 9. Why are these people fighting ?—Because they do not like one another. 10. From what did he die ?—From a wound. 11. I hope that you feel better now ? 12. We bathed this morning in the lake ; the water was quite warm. 13. How much must I give this porter ? 14. Did you receive my letter ? 15. How much did you pay for this suit of clothes ? 16. We saw you in the town, but you did not see us. 17. We waited three hours. 18. Where did you buy this book ?—I buy all my books in the same shop. 19. Have you tried this dish ? It is very tasty.—No, I am a little afraid ; I don't know of what it is. 20. They have forbidden us to walk in their garden. 21. We returned home the day before yesterday. 22. Have you finished your work ? 23. We lived five years in Serbia. 24. How long did you stay in London ? 25. All the newspapers say the same thing, but not one of them speaks the truth. 26. Give me another towel and another piece of soap. 27. Many people say that they cook well in that hotel. 28. Were you alone in the theatre last night ? 29. That is the same man whom we saw yesterday. 30. She said this herself, but probably she was wrong.

## CHAPTER 27

THE FUTURE TENSE OF *TO HAVE*, AND OF  
OTHER VERBS

THIS tense is formed from all verbs in the same way as the future of *бѣти*, as mentioned on p. 73 ; the future of *имати* = *to have* is :

Sing.	1.	<i>ја ѣу имати</i>	or	<i>имаѣу.</i>
	2.	<i>тѣ ѣеш имати</i>	,,	<i>имаѣеш.</i>
	3.	<i>ѡн ѣе имати</i>	,,	<i>имаѣе.</i>
		<i>ѡна ѣе имати</i>	,,	<i>имаѣе.</i>
		<i>ѡно ѣе имати</i>	,,	<i>имаѣе.</i>
Pl.	1.	<i>мѣ ѣемо имати</i>	,,	<i>имаѣемо.</i>
	2.	<i>вѣ ѣете имати</i>	,,	<i>имаѣете.</i>
	3.	<i>ѡни ѣе имати</i>	,,	<i>имаѣе.</i>
		<i>ѡне ѣе имати</i>	,,	<i>имаѣе.</i>
		<i>ѡна ѣе имати</i>	,,	<i>имаѣе.</i>

When the verb is reflexive the pronoun *се* is placed as follows : *ја ѣу се вратиѣи* or *вратиѣу се* = *I shall return*.

If the stem ends in *з* or *с*, these become *ш* before *ѣ* in the shortened forms of the future.

*грѣсти* (cf. p. 140) = *to bite*, future : *грѣшѣу*, e.g. from *гриз + ѣу*, *грис + ѣу* ; *пѣсти* (cf. p. 141) = *to fall*, future : *пѣшѣу*, from *пас + ѣу*.

If the infinitive ends in *-ѣи*, the enclitic present forms of *хрѣти* (*ѣу*, *ѣеш*, *ѣе*, &c.) are not suffixed to the stem, but put after the infinitive as a separate word, e.g.

*рѣѣи* (cf. p. 142) = *to say*, shortened future :

<i>рѣѣи ѣу</i>	<i>рѣѣи ѣемо</i>
<i>рѣѣи ѣеш</i>	<i>рѣѣи ѣете</i>
<i>рѣѣи ѣе</i>	<i>рѣѣи ѣе</i>

The *exact future* of имати and of all other verbs is formed by means of the perfective present of бѣти (cf. p. 34) and the past participle of any verb, e.g.

- |                          |                         |
|--------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. бѹдѣм имао (f. имала) | бѹдѣмо имали (f. имале) |
| 2. бѹдѣш имао (f. имала) | бѹдѣте имали (f. имале) |
| 3. бѹдѣ имао             | бѹдѹ имали              |
| бѹдѣ имала               | бѹдѹ имале              |
| бѹдѣ имало               | бѹдѹ имала              |

This tense is mostly used after кад = *when, if*, or ако = *if*, in temporal or conditional subordinate clauses, e.g.

1. Вѣдећу вас кад бѹдем имао времена = *I shall see you when I (shall) have time.*

2. Ако бѹдем имао времена доћи ћу да вас вѣдим = *If I (shall) have time I shall come to see you.*

## CHAPTER 28

### INDEFINITE PRONOUNS AND ADVERBS

I, 1. By prefixing with the particle не such interrogative pronouns as кò = *who?* and штà (or штò) = *what?* these pronouns acquire an indefinite meaning, e.g. нѣко = *some one, any one*; нѣшто = *something, anything*.

2. кòји, кòја, кòје are usually contracted with нѣ into :

Masc. Sing. нѣкѣи, Pl. нѣкѣи	} = <i>certain, some.</i>
Fem. Sing. нѣкѣа, Pl. нѣкѣа	
Neut. Sing. нѣкò, Pl. нѣкѣа	

3. кàкѣв, кàкѣва, кàкѣво prefixed with не has the following meaning :

нѣкакав (m.)	} = <i>of a certain sort, a certain (= нѣки).</i>
нѣкаква (f.)	
нѣкакво (n.)	

4. From *коликѣ* the most usual form is the neuter :  
*нѣколико* = *several* (requires the gen. pl.).

5. From *чїѣ* = *whose* are formed  
*нѣчїѣ*, *нѣчїѣ*, *нѣчїѣ* = *some one's*.

II. Prefixed with *ни* these pronouns acquire negative meaning, e.g.

1. *нико* = *no one*, *ништа* = *nothing* ; when these pronouns are governed by a preposition, the latter separates their two halves, e.g. *ни од кога* = *not from any one* ; *нипошто* = *not for anything (in the world)*.

2. *никакав*, *никаква*, *-во* = *not of any kind, none*, e.g. *нє видѣм никакав пѣт* = *I see no road at all*.

3. *ничиѣ*, *-јѣ*, *-јѣ* = *no one's*.

4. *нијѣдан*, *нијѣдна*, &c., are also used instead of *никоји*, &c.

III. The prefix *кѣ-* makes these pronouns still more indefinite, e.g.

*кѣкѣ* = *any one whatever, just any one* ; *кѣштѣ* = *just anything* ; these have derogatory meaning. Similarly *кѣкакав*, *кѣчїѣ*.

IV. *гдѣ-* has distributive force, e.g.

*гдѣко* = *some one at times*, also *гдѣкоји*, *гдѣ гдѣ* = *here and there*.

V. *штѣ-* :

*штѣко* = *this one and then that*, also *штѣшта*, *штѣкоји* (these are rarely used).

VI. The words *му драго* (lit. *to him dear*) are often added to all interrogative pronouns, e.g.

*кѣ му драго* = *any one you like* (*му* is impersonal) ; *штѣ му драго* = *anything you like* ; *кѣји му драго* = *кѣ му драго*, &c.

VII. By suffixing them with -год they acquire two different meanings, according to whether one word is formed or two :

кòгод=*some one*, but ко гòд=*whoever, any one whoever, any one you like* ; штòгод=*something, што гòд=whatever, anything whatever, anything you like*. Similarly који гòд, &c., какав гòд, &c., колико гòд, чији гòд, &c., but these only separately.

VIII. Prefixed with и they acquire the meaning 'ever', 'at all', e.g.

йко=*any one at all* ; йшта=*anything at all* ; йкоји, -а, -е,=*any at all* ; йчији=*any one's at all* ; йкакав=*any at all, of any kind whatever* ; йкако=*by any means at all* ; йкада=*ever (at all)*.

IX. The prefix ма gives them the meaning of '-ever', and is written separately, e.g.

мà кò=*whoever* ; мà штà=*whatever, &c.*

X. By prefixing them with свà, свè (cf. p. 165) they acquire a general meaning, e.g.

свàки, свàка, свàко=*every, each* ; свàшта, свàшто=*everything* ; свàчијѝ—свàчијà—свàчијè=*every one's* ; свè-колики, -а, -о,=*of every kind*<sup>1</sup>; свàкако means *in any case*.

## CHAPTER 29

### PRACTICE IN THE USE OF THE VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED

#### Vocabulary

тр̀говац=*merchant*  
ра̀дник=*labourer*  
ста̀до=*flock*  
вра̀бац=*sparrow*

про̀лаз=*passage*  
у̀вреда=*offence*  
пра̀во=*right*  
ду̀г=*debt*

<sup>1</sup> Also свàковрстан, свàковрсна, from вр̀ста=*a sort, a kind*.

рѹкѡв = *sleeve*  
 хлѡд = *shadow, shade*  
 хрѡст = *oak* (also дуб)  
 ѹѡк = *sack*  
 ѡкона = *icon (holy image)*  
 стѡтина = *hundred*  
 нѡзбрдѡца = *slope*  
 долѡна = *valley*  
 (х)рѡна = *food*  
 вѡтра = *fire*  
 ѡбала = *bank* (of river, &c.)  
 вѡп = *pool*

улѣтети (*pfv.*, Class V, 2) = *to fly into*  
 прѡвити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to pretend (to be)*  
 рѡдо = *gladly*

грѡница = *frontier*  
 ѡстина = *truth*  
 нѣпрѡвѡда = *injustice*  
 пѡмрчина = *darkness*  
 плѡта = *salary*  
 гвѡзден, гвѡздена = *iron*  
 ѣнглѣскѡѡ = *English*  
 сѣрпски = *Serbian*  
 зѡузѣт = *occupied*  
 стѡден, студѣна = *cold*  
 верѡвѡтан = *probable*  
 слѡчан = *like (+c+inst.)*

кѡпати се (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to bathe* (intrans.)  
 скѡкати (*ipfv.*, III, 2 b) = *to jump*  
 пѡгѡнути (*pfv.*, II) = *to be killed*

### Reading Exercise

The verbs of the first group, cf. p. 139.

1. Хѡћете ли се мнѡго брѡнути ако вѡша дѣца ѡду<sup>1</sup> на рѣку?—Дабѡме да хѡћу! 2. Њѣгова брѡћа пѡгѡнула су у ѡвѡме рѡту. 3. Дѣца чѣсто чѣзну за свѡјѡм кѡћѡм. 4. Кѡснули смо цѣѡ дѡн ѡдѡѡ<sup>2</sup> из вѡроши у сѣло. 5. Зѡшто нѡсте ѡшли ѡ кућу нѣго сте се мрзнули на стѡденѡм вѣтру! 6. іве рѡже ће брзо ѡвенути. 7. Хѡћете ли да дѡгнѣте тѡ пѣро са пѡда?—Врѡло рѡдо. 8. Нѣка стѡра гѡспођѡ клѣкнула је пред ѡкону насрѣд цркви. 9. Нѡсам мѡгаѡ да га вѡкнѣм јѣр је бѡ сѡвише далѣко од мѣне. 10. Нѣкакав чѡвек са дѡгом брѡдом трѡгнуѡ ме је за рѡкѡв кѡда сам се нагнуѡ кроз прѡзор. 11. Кѡд сте се крѣнули ѡд куће тѣ сте стѡгли тѡко рѡно?—Крѣнуѡ сам се у пѡла чѣтири. 12. Нѡко

<sup>1</sup> Like ѡћи.

<sup>2</sup> Present indecl. participle from ѡћи, cf. p. 194.

ми није хтѣо помоћи да дигнем овај пра̄к на клупу. 13. Она је неколико пута пала на ђвѡј нѡзбордици. 14. Ко год је хтѣо мѡгао је сѣсти у прѡвѡ рѣд. 15. Куповали су што год су хтѣли и сад се брѡнѡ шта ће (sc. радити) без новца. 16. Јесте ли срѣли малочас једног високѡг господина са шѣширом у рѡци?—Нѡсам. 17. Срѣли смо децу која су побегла ђвѡм путем у ѡнѡ долину. 18. Идѡће године лѣтоваћемо у сѣлу. 19. Где сте зѡмовали прѡшле године?—У Италији. 20. Никада нећу моћи разликовати ваше синове, толико су слични. 21. Срби су војевали са Турцима неколико стѡтѡна година. 22. Радоваћемо се много ако бѡдете дошли лѣтѡс да бѡдемо заједно у сѣлу. 23. Енглези и Срби сигурно никада неће међу собом ратовати. 24. Зар ћемо се руковати колико год се пута данас бѡдемо срѣли! 25. Кад мој пријатељ бѡде добио сѡна богато ћу га даривати. 26. Мајка ће мѡловати свѡје дете (па) ма какво ѡно било. 27. Нећу им стѡ пута казивати ѡсту ствар. 28. Именујте ми најбоље ствари из српске књижевности.

The verbs of the third group, cf. pp. 145 ff.

29. Ми нећемо хвалити кога му драго него само заслужне ѡѡде. 30. Живећемо како му драго. 31. Нећемо примати свѡчије савете. 32. Овога лѣта превѡдићете Шекспира. 33. Надао сам се да ћете ѡвѣк говорити ѡистину. 34. Жѡleo сам да их виђим сѡноћ, ѡли ни су дошли. 35. ѡвѣк ћемо мрзети непра̄вду. 36. Јѡче ме је много болела глава. 37. Он је толико грдно некога радника да сам га се сам ја стѡдео. 38. Бѡјѡм се да нећете моћи пренѡйти у ђвѡме хѡтелу; свѡ је заузѣто. 39. Колико сте књѡга данас купили?—Ниједну. 40. Само мала деца бѡјѣ се помрчине. 41. Ложиће ли вѡтру ѡ соби где спавате?—Никад. 42. Гѡворите ли енглески?



—Врло ма̀ло. 43. Она је живела у Ср̀бији го̀дину дана̀.  
 44. Јесте ли преводили шт̀дгод са ср̀пског на енглески ?—  
 Нисам ништа. 45. Јесте ли мно̀го ра̀дили док сте би́ли  
 на универзитету ?—При́лично. 46. Зар ви́ше не може  
 (e.g. он, она) да тр̀чи ?—Не може. 47. Јутр̀с је  
 ужа̀сно гр̀мело. 48. Ка̀д ћете ми врати́ти књи́ге ко̀је  
 (ог шт̀д) сте у́зели пр̀е не́ки дан ?—Сутра. 49. Ми́ ћемо  
 вам ја̀вити ако га бу̀демо ви́дели. 50. Где си у́хватио  
 то̀га вра̀пца ?—У̀ соби, ул̀етео је кроз про̀зор. 51.  
 Ста̀до ова̀ца лежа̀ло је у хла̀ду ши́роко̀га хра̀ста. 52.  
 Пра̀ви се да не чу́је. 53. Ку̀пају́ћи се ска̀кали су са  
 ви́соке обале у ду̀боки ви́р. 54. Сва̀како, ви́ ћете до́ћи ?  
 —Да, до́ћи ћу чим при́мим пла̀ту. 55. Забра̀нићемо вам  
 про̀лаз о̀вуда ако о̀пет бу̀дете дошли с(а) ку̀четом. 56.  
 Јесте ли пу̀шили ка̀дгод ?—Јесам, кад сам био студент.  
 57. У̀дарио га је по носу не́каквим гво̀зденим шта̀пом.  
 58. Не́чија ко̀ла би́ла су си́ноћ пред његовом ку́ћом.  
 59. Хо̀ћете ли да тр̀чимо ?—Не мо̀гу, мр̀зи ме. 60.  
 Же́лите ли да му ка̀жем да сам је ви́део ?—Не. 61. Кад  
 го̀д сам је ви́део ја̀ сам је по̀здравио љу̀базно колико го̀д  
 сам у́мео. 62. Нису ми пла̀тили сав ду̀г. 63. Нису  
 га пу̀стили преко гра̀нице. 64. За̀што тр̀пите такве  
 у̀вреде ! 65. Др̀жим да сам у пра̀ву. 66. Је ли го̀рела  
 ва̀тра си́ноћ у о̀вој соби ?—Ни́је.

### Notes

4. Many verbs whose infinitive ends in -нути lose the syllable  
 -ну- in the past part. active, e.g. ки́снули смо or ки́сли смо ;  
 5. мр̀знули or мр̀зали ; 8. кл̀екнула or кл̀екла ; 10. тр̀гнуо or  
 тр̀гао (or тр̀го in conversation) ; на̀гнуо or на̀гао (=на̀го),  
 &c. 11. Also кр̀енути, *transitive pfv.* = *to move some one or*  
*something.* 13. па̀ла, from па̀сти, stem пад-. 18. и́дүћи,  
 -а, -е, present part. act. from и́ћи, used here as an adjective =

*following.* 20. різликовати, used transitively=*to tell the difference between.* 24. спрѣсти се (stem спрѣ-), refl., *to meet (one another).*

### English Sentences

1. This merchant pays very little to his workmen and work-women. 2. They were lunching in the shade of this large oak. 3. The puppy bit the sleeve of his coat. 4. We are warming ourselves by the fire. 5. This workman gets very good pay, but he spends it all in the inn. 6. We were sitting on the bank of the pool. 7. At what o'clock shall you start to-morrow? 8. We met them at the end of the valley. 9. We cannot light the fire, we have no matches. 10. You are right and he is wrong. 11. This slope is so steep that we cannot ride up it. 12. Where did you buy your house? It looks a very good one. 13. This professor gets 25,000 *dinars* of salary, but nevertheless he has many debts. 14. These children are pasturing their flocks on our meadows; I told them that they may. 15. As soon as we returned we undressed and went to bed. 16. We shall stay here several weeks; we like this place very much. 17. If you give me some money I will go to buy some tobacco, some cigarettes, and some matches. 18. My foot hurts; I fancy my boot is too tight. 19. I must go and get a shave and get my hair cut. Where is the barber's?—At the end of this street. 20. He has broken his mirror; they say that is very unlucky, but I don't believe this. 21. Does this dog bite?—Yes, and this cat scratches. 22. When shall we arrive at Salonika?—In two hours. 23. How far is the frontier from here?—I don't know. 24. Why are you silent and do not answer me? 25. It is time that we get up and wash and shave and get dressed. Breakfast is already waiting. 26. At what time did you start? 27. Who gave you that book? 28. How much money have you spent? 29. Do you prefer wine or beer? 30. You are laughing at me.

## CHAPTER 30

THE IMPERATIVE AND THE CONDITIONAL OF  
ALL VERBS

## I. Imperative

As indicated on p. 81, special forms exist for the 2nd pers. sing. and the 1st and 2nd pers. pl.

These exist in two forms, viz.  $\bar{\text{н}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{мо}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{те}$ , and  $\bar{\text{н}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{мо}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{те}$ ; the first are taken by all the verbs of Classes I and II and by all those of Classes III and V whose presents are not formed with  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{ем}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{им}$ ; the second are taken by such verbs of Classes III and V as form their present with  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{ем}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{им}$ , and by all the verbs of Class IV.

The 3rd pers. sing. and pl. is paraphrased, as in English, the forms of the present being used preceded by  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{ека} = \text{let}$ .

These endings,  $\bar{\text{н}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{мо}$ , and  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{те}$ , are added to the *present* stem after cutting off the  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{ем}$  or  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{им}$  of the present, e.g.

$\bar{\text{т}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{сн}} = \text{shake}$ ;  $\bar{\text{н}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{к}}\bar{\text{а}} \bar{\text{т}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{с}}\bar{\text{е}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{т}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{сн}}\bar{\text{мо}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{т}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{сн}}\bar{\text{те}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{к}}\bar{\text{а}} \bar{\text{т}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{с}}\bar{\text{у}}$ ; similarly  $\bar{\text{у}}\bar{\text{з}}\bar{\text{нн}}(\text{те}) = \text{take}$ ;  $\bar{\text{п}}\bar{\text{д}}\bar{\text{чнн}}(\text{те}) = \text{begin}$ ;  $\bar{\text{з}}\bar{\text{о}}\bar{\text{вн}}(\text{те}) = \text{call}$ ;  $\bar{\text{д}}\bar{\text{й}}\bar{\text{гнн}}(\text{те}) = \text{lift}$ ;  $\bar{\text{м}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{тнн}}(\text{те}) = \text{put}$ ;  $\bar{\text{л}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{гнн}}(\text{те}) = \text{lie down}$ ;  $\bar{\text{с}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{днн}}(\text{те}) = \text{sit down}$ ;  $\bar{\text{п}}\bar{\text{о}}\bar{\text{м}}\bar{\text{о}}\bar{\text{гнн}}(\text{те}) = \text{help}$ ;  $\bar{\text{о}}\bar{\text{с}}\bar{\text{т}}\bar{\text{анн}}(\text{те}) = \text{stay}$ ;  $\bar{\text{п}}\bar{\text{и}}\bar{\text{шн}}(\text{те}) = \text{write}$ ;  $\bar{\text{п}}\bar{\text{о}}\bar{\text{к}}\bar{\text{а}}\bar{\text{жн}}(\text{те}) = \text{show}$ ;  $\bar{\text{п}}\bar{\text{о}}\bar{\text{ш}}\bar{\text{л}}\bar{\text{н}}(\text{те}) = \text{send}$ ;  $\bar{\text{у}}\bar{\text{чн}}(\text{те}) = \text{learn}$ ;  $\bar{\text{в}}\bar{\text{й}}\bar{\text{дн}}(\text{те}) = \text{see}$ ;  $\bar{\text{д}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{жн}}(\text{те}) = \text{hold}$ ;  $\bar{\text{т}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{чн}}(\text{те}) = \text{run}$ .

The endings  $\bar{\text{н}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{мо}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\text{те}$  are added to the present stem of the other verbs as follows:

$\bar{\text{ч}}\bar{\text{у}}\bar{\text{ж}} = \text{listen, hear}$ ;  $\bar{\text{н}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{к}}\bar{\text{а}} \bar{\text{ч}}\bar{\text{у}}\bar{\text{ж}}\bar{\text{е}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{ч}}\bar{\text{у}}\bar{\text{ж}}\bar{\text{мо}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{ч}}\bar{\text{у}}\bar{\text{ж}}\bar{\text{те}}$ ,  $\bar{\text{н}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{к}}\bar{\text{а}} \bar{\text{ч}}\bar{\text{у}}\bar{\text{ж}}\bar{\text{у}}$ ; similarly  $\bar{\text{п}}\bar{\text{и}}\bar{\text{ж}}(\text{те}) = \text{drink}$ ;  $\bar{\text{б}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{и}}\bar{\text{ж}}(\text{те}) = \text{shave}$ ;  $\bar{\text{в}}\bar{\text{е}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{у}}\bar{\text{ж}}(\text{те}) = \text{believe}$ ;  $\bar{\text{п}}\bar{\text{р}}\bar{\text{и}}\bar{\text{ч}}\bar{\text{а}}\bar{\text{ж}}(\text{те}) = \text{tell, relate}$ ;  $\bar{\text{н}}\bar{\text{е}} \bar{\text{б}}\bar{\text{о}}\bar{\text{ж}}(\text{те}) \bar{\text{с}}\bar{\text{е}} = \text{do not fear}$ ;  $\bar{\text{с}}\bar{\text{т}}\bar{\text{о}}\bar{\text{ж}}(\text{те}) = \text{stand}$ .

In *emphatic prohibitions* the imperative is preceded by  $\bar{\text{н}}\bar{\text{е}}$ , e.g.  $\bar{\text{н}}\bar{\text{е}} \bar{\text{п}}\bar{\text{о}}\bar{\text{к}}\bar{\text{а}}\bar{\text{з}}\bar{\text{у}}\bar{\text{ж}}(\text{те}) = \text{do not show}$  (for the aspects

cf. pp. 121 ff.), otherwise very frequent use is made of the word нѐмѡj(тѐ)=*don't*, which is really a contraction of the imper. of не мѡѡи=*not to be able*; this is followed by the infinitive, e.g. нѐмѡj(тѐ) кáзати (показывати)=*don't tell (show)*; нѐмѡjмо=*do not let us*.

The 3rd pers. sing. and pl. negatived is expressed thus : нѐка не дѡлази=*let him not come*.

Verbs of Class I whose roots end in г, к, х, change these letters into з, ц, с, e.g. рѐѡи=*to tell*; рѐци(тѐ)=*tell*; рѐцимо=*let us say (let us suppose)*.

The imperative of разѡмети is разѡми(тѐ)=*understand*; that of both дáвати and дáти is дáj(тѐ)=*give*.

In verbs of Class II the н is frequently omitted in rapid speech, e.g. мѐтите, сѐдите.

## II. Conditional

This is formed, as mentioned on p. 81, by means of the aorist of the verb бѡти, and the past part. active of any verb, e.g. from ѡмати :

1. jâ бѡх ѡмао (*f.* ѡмала) or ѡмао (*f.* ѡмала) бѡх.
2. тѡ би ѡмао (*f.* ѡмала) ,, ѡмао (*f.* ѡмала) би.
3. ѡн би ѡмао ,, ѡмао би.  
     ѡна би ѡмала ,, ѡмала би.  
     ѡно би ѡмало ,, ѡмало би
1. мѡ би ѡмали (*f.* ѡмале) or ѡмали (*f.* ѡмале) би.
2. вѡ би ѡмали (*f.* ѡмале) ,, ѡмали (*f.* ѡмале) би.
3. ѡни би ѡмали ,, ѡмали би.  
     ѡне би ѡмале ,, ѡмале би.  
     ѡна би ѡмала ,, ѡмала би.

The form би through the whole plural is more usual than the forms бѡсмо, бѡсте (cf. p. 82).

## CHAPTER 31

## ADVERBS

(AND THE USE OF THE IMPERATIVE AND THE  
CONDITIONAL)

THE adverbs may be of the following kinds :

## 1. Temporal

баш = <i>just, exactly</i>	јуче = <i>yesterday</i>
вѣзда = <i>always</i>	кад ог када = <i>when</i>
вѣћ = <i>already, (but)</i>	кадгод = <i>sometime or other</i>
вечѣрас = <i>this evening</i>	кад год = <i>whenever</i>
вѣчито = <i>eternally</i>	касно = <i>late</i>
вѣшѣ не . . . = <i>no longer (cf.</i>	каснѣје = <i>later (on)</i>
p. 186)	каткад = <i>at times</i>
давно = <i>long since</i>	лане ог лани = <i>last year</i>
данас = <i>to-day</i>	лѣти = <i>in the summer</i>
дану = <i>by day</i>	лѣтѣс = <i>this summer</i>
дѣсад = <i>till now</i>	малочас = <i>just recently</i>
дѣцкан = <i>late</i>	мало после = <i>a little later,</i>
дѣцнѣје = <i>later (on).</i>	<i>presently</i>
зачас = <i>in a minute</i>	мало прѣ = <i>a few minutes ago</i>
затѣм = <i>after that</i>	махом = <i>most of the time</i>
зимѣ = <i>in the winter</i>	међутѣм = <i>meanwhile</i>
зимѣс = <i>this winter</i>	најзад = <i>at last, last of all</i>
ѣгда <sup>1</sup> = <i>ever</i>	најпре = <i>first of all</i>
ѣкад = <i>ever (at all)</i>	напокон = <i>at the end of (of</i>
ѣстом = <i>at the same moment</i>	<i>time)</i>
јѣднѣм = <i>once, one day</i>	напоследку = <i>at last</i>
јесѣнас = <i>this autumn</i>	најпосле = <i>finally</i>
јутрѣс = <i>this morning</i>	нѣдавно = <i>lately</i>

<sup>1</sup> In the phrase што ѣгда мѣжете = *as much as ever you can.*

нѣкад(а) = <i>formerly</i>	прòлетōс = <i>this spring</i>
нѣкад(а) = <i>never</i>	р̀аније = <i>earlier, previously</i>
нòќас = <i>to-night</i>	р̀ано = <i>early</i>
нòќу = <i>by night</i>	р̀ѣтко = <i>seldom, rarely</i>
òд̀авно = <i>д̀авно</i>	с̀ад or с̀ада = <i>now</i>
òдм̀ах = <i>at once, immediately</i>	св̀акад } = <i>always</i>
òдс̀ад = <i>henceforward</i>	св̀агда }
òнда = <i>then</i>	с̀йнòќ = <i>last night</i>
онòм̀ад or оном̀адне = <i>the other day</i>	ск̀оро = <i>soon</i>
òном̀л̀ани = <i>the other year</i>	с̀утра = <i>to-morrow</i>
òпет = <i>again</i>	т̀ад(̀а) = <i>then</i>
òтад(а) = <i>since then</i>	т̀ам̀ан <sup>1</sup> = <i>only just</i>
òткад(а) = <i>since when</i>	т̀ѣк <sup>1</sup> = <i>only (German erst), also = nevertheless, at any rate (cf. p. 193)</i>
ѝòнекад = <i>at times</i>	ў̀бр̀зо = <i>soon</i>
п̀д̀сле = <i>afterwards</i>	ў̀в̀ѣк = <i>always</i>
п̀д̀слеп̀одне = <i>in the afternoon</i>	ў̀вече = <i>in the evening</i>
п̀òт̀ом(е) = <i>after that</i>	ў̀јутру = <i>in the morning</i>
пр̀ѣ = <i>formerly (also = ago)</i>	ў̀очи = <i>on the eve</i>
пр̀ѣп̀одне = <i>in the morning</i>	ў̀скоро = <i>soon</i>
пр̀ѣк̀јуче = <i>the day before yesterday</i>	шт̀ò пр̀ѣ = <i>as soon as possible</i>
пр̀ѣк̀(о)с̀утра = <i>the day after to-morrow</i>	ч̀а̀к = <i>even</i>
пр̀ѣк̀синоќ = <i>the night before last</i>	ч̀асом or ч̀аском = (1) <i>for a minute, (2) in a minute</i>
	ч̀ѣсто or ч̀ѣсто п̀ўта = <i>often</i>

## 2. Local

б̀л̀и́зу = <i>near by</i>	гд̀ѣгд̀е = <i>in places</i>
б̀л̀и́же = <i>nearer</i>	гд̀ѣгòд = <i>somewhere or other</i>
гд̀ѣ = <i>where</i>	гд̀егòд = <i>wherever</i>

<sup>1</sup> + шт̀ò = *barely*, cf. p. 213.

гòре = <i>up above, (to) above</i>	òдāвдē = <i>from here, hence</i>
далèко = <i>far</i>	òдаклē = <i>from where, whence</i>
дāље = <i>further</i>	òдāндē = <i>from yonder</i>
дèсно = <i>to the right, on the right</i> <sup>1</sup>	òдатлē = <i>from there, thence</i>
дòвдē = <i>as far as here</i>	òдовуд = <i>from this direction</i>
дòкле = <i>how far (= to what distance)</i> <sup>2</sup>	òдонуд = <i>from that direction</i>
дòле = <i>down below, (to) below</i>	òзгō or одòзгō = <i>from above</i>
дòндē = <i>to that place (yonder)</i>	òздо or одòздō = <i>from below</i>
дòтлē = <i>to that place</i>	òнамо = <i>thither</i>
йзблйза = <i>from close to</i>	òнде = <i>yonder</i>
издалèка = <i>from afar</i>	òнудā = <i>that way</i>
изнўтра = <i>(from) inside</i>	òстрāг = <i>from behind</i>
кāмо = <i>whither</i>	òткуд(а) = <i>whence</i>
кўд or кўдā = <i>whither</i>	òтуд = <i>thence</i>
куд гōд = <i>whithersoever</i>	позāди = <i>behind</i>
лèво = <i>to the left, on the left</i> <sup>3</sup>	пòпрēко = <i>across</i>
мèстимнице = <i>in places</i>	свўдā = <i>everywhere</i>
нāдесно = <i>дèсно</i>	спòља = <i>(from) outside</i>
нāзāд = <i>backwards</i>	спрēда = <i>(from) in front</i>
нāлèво = <i>лèво</i>	тāмо = <i>there, thither</i>
нāпоље = <i>(to) out of doors</i>	тāмо—āмо = <i>hither and thither</i>
нāпољу = <i>out of doors</i>	тŷ = <i>(1) here, (2) there</i>
нāпрēд = <i>forwards</i>	тўдā = <i>that way</i>
нāтрāг = <i>backwards</i>	ўздŷж = <i>along, lengthwise</i>
нēгде = <i>somewhere</i>	унāзāд = <i>назад</i>
нйгде = <i>nowhere</i>	унāкрет = <i>across, crosswise</i>
òвамо = <i>hither</i>	унāпрēд = <i>напред</i>
òвде = <i>here</i>	унўтра = <i>inside</i>
òвудā = <i>this way</i>	чāк = <i>even, right up to</i>

<sup>1</sup> Ор с дèснē стране.

<sup>3</sup> Ор с лèве стране.

<sup>2</sup> *How far is it to . . . ?* = кòлико је далèко до . . . ?

## 3. Modal

бада̀ва = <i>in vain, gratis</i>	йп̄а̀к = <i>however, nevertheless</i>
ба̀р = <i>at least</i>	ја̀мачно = <i>surely, I expect</i>
бѐсплатно = <i>gratis, without paying</i>	јѐдѝно = <i>solely</i>
бр̄зо = <i>quickly, fast</i>	јѐдва = <i>barely, hardly, scarcely</i>
вѐма = <i>very</i>	јо̀ш = <i>still, yet, more (some more)</i>
вѐћин̄ом = <i>for the most part</i>	ка̀о = <i>as (like), cf. p. 210</i>
вѝше̄ = <i>no more, no longer</i>	ка̀ко = <i>how</i>
вр̄ло = <i>very</i>	ка̀ко г̄о̀д = <i>in whatever way</i>
г̄ото̀во = <i>almost</i>	к(а)о̀ба̀ја̀гн̄ = <i>making out that (colloquial)</i>
до̀ста = <i>truly, really</i>	к̀ра̀дом = <i>stealthily</i>
до̀некле = <i>to a certain extent (also lit. of place)</i>	к̀рѝшом = <i>secretly</i>
др̄у̀кчѝје = <i>differently</i>	лѐже̄ћк̄е̄ = <i>lying down</i>
жму̀ре̄ћк̄е̄ = <i>closing the eyes</i>	ма̀кар = <i>at least</i>
за̀ста = <i>до̀ста</i>	ма̀ло по̀ мало = <i>little by little, by degrees</i>
за̀једно = <i>together</i>	ма̀лчѝце = <i>a little bit</i>
за̀луд = <i>in vain</i>	мо̀жда = <i>perhaps</i>
за̀мало = <i>у̀мало</i>	му̀ком = <i>silently</i>
за̀р = <i>really? (cf. p. 33)</i>	му̀чк̄ӣ = <i>in a cowardly way</i>
за̀то̀ = <i>for that reason</i>	на̀валѝцӣе̄ } = <i>purposely</i>
за̀цѐло = <i>for sure</i>	на̀вла̀ш } = <i>purposely</i>
за̀што = <i>why</i>	на̀име = <i>namely</i>
за̀бй̀ља <sup>1</sup> = <i>in very fact, really</i>	на̀опа̀чке = <i>wrong way round</i>
за̀бй̀љск̄ӣ <sup>1</sup> = <i>seriously</i>	на̀равно = <i>naturally</i>
из̄нѐна̀да = <i>suddenly</i>	на̀рочито̀ = <i>especially</i>
ѝна̀че = (1) <i>otherwise, else</i> ;	на̀тра̀пк̄е̄ = <i>backwards</i>
(2) <i>in any case</i> ; (3) <i>as a rule</i>	

<sup>1</sup> Cf. о̀збѝљан = *serious, grave, earnest*.



нăузнăко = <i>on one's back</i>	прăво = <i>right (just, straight, lit. and fig.)</i>
нăшински ог нăшки = <i>in our fashion</i>	прїлично = <i>fairly</i>
нѣкăко = <i>in a certain way</i>	рăвно = <i>all the same (+ мн је)</i>
неѡбично = <i>unusually</i>	сăмо = <i>only</i>
нѣмилице = <i>mercilessly</i>	свејѣдно = <i>all the same, it doesn't matter</i>
нѣприметно = <i>imperceptibly</i>	сăсвїм = <i>quite</i>
нѣхотицѣ = <i>unwillingly</i>	свăкăко = <i>certainly, by all means, surely</i>
нїкăко = <i>in no way, not at all</i>	свѡјски = <i>in a kindred spirit</i>
нїпошто = <i>not for anything</i>	сїгўрно = <i>without fail, for certain</i>
нїчицѣ = <i>prone</i>	скўпа = <i>together</i>
ѡбично = <i>usually</i>	стѡга = <i>for that reason</i>
овăкѡ = <i>in this way</i>	стојѣћкѣ = <i>standing up</i>
ѡдвѣћ } = <i>too much</i>	сўвише = (1) <i>too much</i> ; (2) <i>too (e.g. tired)</i>
ѡдвише } = <i>too much</i>	тăјом = <i>secretly</i>
одјѣдăнпўт } = <i>all at once</i>	тăкѡ = <i>so, thus, in that way, to such an extent</i>
одјѣднѡм } = <i>(suddenly)</i>	тăкѡђе(р) = <i>also, likewise</i>
онăкѡ = <i>in that way</i>	тăко ѡстѡ = <i>in just the same way</i>
ѡсобито = <i>especially</i>	тăчно = (1) <i>exactly</i> ; (2) <i>punctually</i>
пѣшке ог пѣшице = <i>on foot</i>	тѡѡбѡж = <i>as it were, making out that</i>
поимѣнце = <i>by one's<sup>1</sup> name</i>	ўзалўд = <i>зълуд</i>
појѣдїнцѣ = <i>singly</i>	ўмало = <i>almost</i>
полăгăно = (1) <i>slowly</i> ; (2) <i>gradually</i>	
пѡмало = <i>slightly</i>	
пѡлако = <i>slowly</i>	
пѡсепце = <i>one at a time</i>	
пѡстепено } = <i>gradually</i>	
пѡступно } = <i>gradually</i>	
пѡтцунѡ = <i>completely</i>	
потрбўшкѣ = <i>on one's stomach</i>	

<sup>1</sup> *by name, namely = нăимѣ.*

уòпште = *in general*хòтимницѣ = *willingly*ўпрāво = *just so*шїрòм = *wide open*

тїм (inst. of тò) followed by бòље, гòре, вїше, мање = *by so much the better, all the better, worse, more, less*; this may be preceded by у кòлико (cf. p. 135).

#### 4. Quantitative

(Cf. also modal adverbs)

вїше = *more*нāјвише = *most, at most*вїше не = *no more* (нѣманāјмање = *least, at least*

вїше . . . = *there is no more + gen. . . .*)

нѣколико = *several, a few*

дòвòльно } = *enough, suffi-*  
дòста } = *ciently, fairly*

нї у колико } = *not in the*  
нїмало } = *least*

кòлико = *how much, how many*прїлично = *fairly, rather*прòсечно = *on an average*сўвише = *too much*мāло = *little, a few*сўвише мāло = *too little*мāње = *less*толикò = *so much, so many*

мнòго } = *much, many, a*  
пўно } = *great deal, a lot*

ўмало = *nearly*

#### 5. Adjectival Adverbs

These are formed from adjectives as follows :

гòсподски = *in a gentlemanly way*прїятèльски = *in a friendly way*дòбро = *well, all right*рѣаво = *very bad(ly)*јунāчки = *heroically*рўжно = *bad, badly*кўкавички = *in a cowardly way*српскї = *in Serbian (fashion or language)*

#### Vocabulary

нїва = *field*жѣга = *great heat*рāзвалине = *ruins*āмрѣл, кїшòбрāн = *umbrella*тāјна = *secret*мрāз = *frost*

врѣме = *time, weather*кѣша = *rain*гáђáњe = *shooting*нѡв = *new*јáк (*nom. pl. masc., јáки*),јáка = *strong*напати (*pfv., I, 1, and II*) =  
*to attack*тражити (*ipfv., V, 1*) = *to seek*увести (*pfv., I, 1*) = *to lead*  
*into*забóравити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to*  
*forget*пóверити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to con-*  
*fide*грѹб, грѹба = *rude, rough*рѹжан = *ugly*сѣгѹран = *sure*интересáнтан = *interesting*лáнскѣ = *of last year*óдати (*pfv., IV*) = *to betray*рáзвэдити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to*  
*separate*затвóрити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to shut*<sup>1</sup>отвóрити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to open*<sup>2</sup>вѣжбати се (*ipfv., IV*) = *to prac-*  
*tise*јáвити се (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to let*  
*know about oneself*

### Reading Exercise

1. Мѡлѣм вáс, свѣрајте штѡгод.
2. Рáдите што гѡд хѡћете, мѣни је прáво.
3. Кáжите му, мѡлѣм вас, нека спáва.
4. Нѣмѡјте га тѹћи, тѡ је дѡиста грѹбо ѡд вáс.
5. За њѣга би бѣло мнѡго бѡље да иде ѡдмах ѡдáвдѣ.
6. Рáдије бих ѹмро нѣго да ѡдáм тáјну кѡју ми је пѡверно мѡј пријатељ.
7. Нѣ би трѣбало купѡвати му нѡво одѣло, ѡво је сáсвѣм дѡбро.
8. Зѡвите га да се врáти, забѡравно сам дá му кáжем јѡш нѣшто.
9. Увѣдите је унѹтра.
10. Изáђите нáпоље, мнѡго је пријáтницѣ у ѡвѡме хлáду.
11. Нѣка иду лѣтѡс у ѡно сѣло у кѡме смо мѣ бѣли лáни.
12. Зимѹс ћемо имати јáке мрáзеве.
13. Лѣтѡс ће бити вѣќа жѣга нѣго лáнске гѡдине.
14. Дѣвно би бѣло áко би вечѣрас ѡтишли на кѡнцер(а)г.
15. Дѡшао бих прѡлетѡс дѡ вáс мáкар (ог бáр) на јѣдан дáн áко бѹдем имáо врѣмена.
16. Куд гѡд се крѣнете њѣга ћете срѣсти.
17. Нѣмѡјте толѣко вѣкати ; ћѹтите мáло áко мѡжете.
18. Ђвáј кѡњ

<sup>1</sup> *Shut* (adj.) is зáтворен.

<sup>2</sup> *Open* (adj.) is ѡтворен.

је веома миран, мљжете му прићи сасвљм близу. 19. Онѣ рѣзвалине су врло интересантне, сѣмо спѣља нѣ можѣте ништа видети, морате љћи унутра. 20. Свакако (да) би било сигурније лично с њим да говорите о томе. 21. Нѣмљте нипошто говорити о мѣни, инаѣе ќе се свѣ свршити наопаѣке. 22. Лежѣћке се нѣ може свршити ниѣкавак пѣсао. 23. Рљжно би било ѣко тљ љзме (т.ј.<sup>1</sup> он) крѣшом. 24. Нѣмљте крѣдом изаћи нѣго се јавите. 25. Отворите ширѣм врата и прозоре. 26. Тљкли би се нѣмилице да их нису рѣзвалили. 27. Зѣвите свакога поимѣнце. 28. Војници су лежѣли потрѣбушке вѣжбајљћи се у гађању. 29. Оно што тражите нѣ можете наћи жмурѣћке. 30. Нѣ би трѣбало љрати (њиву) прѣ нѣго што кѣша падне. 31. Свршите ѣаском тај пѣсао па љнда љдите куд гѣд хѣћете. 32. Дѣјте му сѣмо малѣнице (ог маљо) да прѣба. 33. Кљкавички је мљчки напастн. 34. Нѣма више хлѣба. 35. Није више љвде.

### English Sentences

1. We should have come yesterday if we had been able.
2. If I had known that it will rain I should have brought an umbrella.
3. It would be better to start at once, for it is already very late.
4. If you had listened you would have understood.
5. Those are the ruins of an old monastery.
6. What are you looking for?
7. If you have no objection I shall open the window.
8. If I had had more money I should have given him more.
9. Let me know as soon as you arrive.
10. Shut the door, there is a terrible draught; we shall all catch cold.
11. If you practised more, you would play better.
12. If I had the money I should go to the theatre this evening.
13. The soldiers are very hungry and very thirsty.
14. As soon as I finish this job I shall go away.
15. I have found an interesting book.
16. If you had been more amiable she would have confided to you her secret.
17. These are last

<sup>1</sup> то јѣст = i. e.

year's apples, but they are still quite good. 18. I am sure that this would be best. 19. The wind is so strong that I cannot open the window. 20. I have forgotten what I was going to say. 21. If you had done this, they would have killed you. 22. The banks of this river are very steep, and the river itself is very deep and swift. 23. If you had asked him he would have told you. 24. When we came out of the house it was already late and we did not see any one anywhere. 25. In the morning it rained hard, but in the afternoon the weather was fine.

## CHAPTER 32

### THE AORIST, IMPERFECT, AND PLUPERFECT

#### I. The Aorist (cf. p. 81)

THIS tense, rarely used in conversation, is formed from the infinitive stem by cutting off the infinitive ending -ТИ and adding the following personal endings :

Sing. 1st pers. —x	Pl. 1st pers. —смо
2nd —	2nd —сте
3rd —	3rd —ше

Verbs of Class I, 1, insert -o- between the root (ending in a consonant) and these endings, and in the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. add -e ; the following forms are thus obtained :

I. трécox, трéce, трéce, трécosмо, трécoсте, трécosше = *shook* ; similarly ўзex = *took* ; пѡчex = *began* ; лèгох = *lay down* ; звàх = *called*.

II. мèтнух, мèтну, &c. = *put*.

III. чўх, чў, &c. = *heard* ; пíсах, пíса, &c. = *wrote* ; вèровах, вèрова, &c. = *believed*.

IV. прíчах, прíча, &c. = *told, related*.

V. ўчих, ўчи, &c. = *learnt* ; вíдex, вíде, &c. = *saw*.

A great many verbs of other classes follow the aorist-formation of Class I (often inserting a д), in addition to or to

the exclusion of their own forms, e.g. from *имати*, aorist : *имадох*, *имаде*, &c., as well as *ймах* ; from *знати* = *to know*, aor. : *знах* and *знадох* ; from *остати* = *to remain*, *остах* and *остадох* ; from *хтѣти* = *to wish*, *хтѣдох* and, rarely, *хтѣх* ; the aorist of *донѣти* = *to bring* is in the 1st pers. sing. *донех* or *донѣсох*, but in the 3rd sing. only *донесе* ; that of *дати* = *to give*, *дадох*, *даде* ; that of *јѣсти* = *to eat*, *јѣдох*, *јѣде*, &c.

Verbs of Class I with roots in *г*, *к*, *х*, change these in the 2nd and the 3rd pers. sing. of the aorist, e.g. *рѣћи* = *to tell*, *то say*, *рѣкох*, *рѣче*, &c. From the verb *прѣнути* = *to burst*, root *прек-*, the aor. is *прѣкох*, *прѣште* (from *прек* + *е*, *прече*).

## II. The Imperfect (cf. p. 91)

This tense, still more rarely used in conversation, is formed by means of the following personal endings which are added sometimes to the present and sometimes to the infinitive stem :

	I.	II.	III.
Sing. 1.	-āх	-jāх	-иjāх
2.	-āше	-jāше	-иjāше
3.	-āше	-jāше	-иjāше
Pl. 1.	-āсмо	-jāсмо	-иjāсмо
2.	-āсте	-jāсте	-иjāсте
3.	-āху	-jāху	-иjāху

The following are examples of this tense in the various classes of verbs. (N.B. the final consonant or consonants of the root often change as the result of the -j.)

I. *трѣсиjāх*, *трѣсиjāше*, &c., *звāх*, *звāше*, &c.

II. *тѣнjāх*, *тѣнjāше*, &c. (from *тон* + *jах*), *мрjнjāх*, &c. (from *мрзи* + *jах*) = *was getting cold* ; *кнjнjāх*, &c. (from *кнн* + *jах*) = *was getting wet*.

III. *чjнjāх*, *чjнjāше*, &c., *писāх*, *писāше*, &c.

IV. причāх, причāше, &c. = *was telling, relating*.

V. ўчāх, ўчāше, &c., хвāљāх, хвāљāше, &c. (from хвāлити = *to praise*, хвал + јах), вѣђāх, вѣђāше, &c. (from вид + јах).

### III. The Pluperfect

This tense is never used in conversation, and not often in writing. It is formed in two ways : (1) from the past tense of бѣти (cf. p. 59) and the past participle active of any verb, or (2) from the imperfect of бѣти (cf. p. 91) combined with the past participle active, e.g. ѝмати :

1. Sing. 1. ја сам бѣо ѝмао or бѣо сам ѝмао.

Pl. 2. вѣ сте бѣли ѝмали or бѣли сте ѝмали.

2. Sing. 1. (ја) бѣјāх ѝмао (ѝмала f.).

Pl. 2. (вѣ) бѣјāсте (or бѣсте) ѝмали, &c.

## CHAPTER 33

### CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS

#### I. Conjunctions

1. COPULATIVE : ѝ = *and* ; ѝ—ѝ = *both—and* ; кāко—тāко и = *both—and* ; ā = (1) *and*, (2) *but* ; пā = (1) *and* (especially in the phrase па онда = *and then*), (2) *but* ; тē = *and* (often used in consecutive sense = *in such a way that, with the result that*) ; нѣ = *not even* (requires another negative, e.g. нѣмāм ни пāре = *I have not even a centime*) ; нѣ—нѣ (or нѣти—нѣти) = *neither—nor* ; дā ли = *whether* (cf. p. 33).

2. DISJUNCTIVE : ѝли = *or* ; ѝли—ѝли (or more rarely, āли—āли, ја(ли)—ја(ли), вѣљ(а)—вѣљ(а)) = *either—or* ; бѣло—бѣло (or ѝли) = *whether—or* ; кѣје—кѣје = *counting both—and* ; чāс—чāс = *at one time—at another*.

3. ADVERSATIVE: *à*, *àли*, *àма*, *нèго* (or *нò*), *пàк* and *вèћ* all mean *but*, *à* and *àли* being the most usual, the other being stronger; *ипàк* = *however*, *nevertheless*, *after all*; *тà* = *well then*; *мà* = *even if only*; *мàкар* = *at least* (also = *although*).

4. CAUSAL: *јèр* (seldom *јèрбо*) = *because*, *пòшто* = *since*.

5. CONCLUSIVE: *дàкле* = *and so*; *èле* = *and thus*; *дабòме* = *of course*, *I should say so*.

6. CONDITIONAL: *àко* = *if*; *кàд* (lit. = *when*) = *if*; *дà* = *if*.

7. CONCESSIVE: *прèмда*, *мàда*, *иàко* = *although*; *мàкар* = *even though*.

8. TEMPORAL: *кàд* = *when*; *пòшто* = *after*; *откàко* = *ever since*; *прè нèго* = *before*; *дòк* = *while*; *дòк не* = *until*.

9. FINAL: *нèка* = *in order that*; *èда* = *if possibly*; *кàко би* = *in such way—that*.

Affirmation and negation are expressed by *јèст* (or *јèс*) = *yes*, really the 3rd pers. sing. of *бїти* = *to be*; *дà* and *јà* are also used for *yes*; *нè* = *no*, also *нїје* (lit. = *is not*); in general answers are frequently given by repeating part or the whole of the verb contained in the question, e.g. *јèсте ли га вїдели?* = *did you see him?* or *have you seen him?* *јèсам* or *вїдео сам* = *yes, I have*; *јèсте ли то чуїли?* = *did you hear that?* *нїсам* = *no, I didn't*.

## II. Interjections

The commonest of these are: *здравò* = *hail!* *good-day!* *бòгами* = *indeed, in very truth*; *дабòме* = *of course*; *јàо* = *oh, dear!* (expresses pain and sorrow); *тèшко мèни* = *goodness gracious me!* *Бòже мòј* = *my God!* *фàла* (or *хвàла*) *Бòгу!* = *thank God!* *зàбога* = *good heavens!* *кўку* or *кўку мèни* = *alas!* (also *лèле*); *ўрà!* = *hurrah!* *јè л'те* (or *јèл'те*)? = *is it not so, n'est-ce pas?* *глè* or *глèте* = *look!*



ѐво<sup>1</sup> = *here you are (he or it is), voici*; ѐто<sup>1</sup> and ѐно<sup>1</sup> = *there you are (he or it is), voilà*; е пѧ = *well?* ѐ! = *fancy that!* ѐј! = *hi, I say!* добро дѡшли = (*you, pl., are*) *welcome*; дѡде(р) = *well, go on then*; дѡла = *come* (e.g. дѡла кѧжи ми = *come, tell me*); хѧјде(те) = *come here*, also хѧјдемо = *let us go*; бѡѧ = *flop!* ѡш = *be off!* мѡре (or брѐ) is a general word of address, supposed to be derived from the Greek Μѡρος.

Common exclamations derived from verbs are : ѡди(те), ѡдлази(те) (N.B. this latter is much stronger) = *go away*; жѡри(те) = *hurry*<sup>2</sup> *up!* (полѧко, *adv.* = *go slow!*); слѡбодно,<sup>3</sup> ѡѧи(те) = *come in* (se. *into the room*); ѧѡтите = *be silent*<sup>4</sup>; стѡј(те) = *stop*; чѡкѧј(те) = *wait*; извѡни(те), or опрѡстите = *excuse me, I beg your pardon*; пѧзите = *take care, mind*; извѡл(и)те = *pray, be so good*. For greetings, passing the time of day, cf. p. 43.

### Vocabulary

свѡтитель = <i>saint</i>	смѡт = <i>death</i>
гѡст = <i>guest</i>	зѧповѡст = <i>order</i>
мѧнастѡр = <i>monastery</i>	рѡч = <i>word</i>
клима = <i>climate</i>	слѡво = <i>letter of the alphabet</i>
мѡре = <i>sea</i>	нѧчин = <i>manner, way</i>
зѡмља = <i>earth, ground, country</i>	сѡседство = <i>neighbourhood</i>
кѧпа = <i>cap</i>	влѧст = <i>power</i>
сѧбља = <i>sabre, sword</i>	љѡбав = <i>love</i>
кѡпа = <i>cup</i> (of metal) <sup>5</sup>	блѧго = <i>treasure, blessedness</i>
кѡвчег = <i>ark</i>	ѡправа = <i>government</i>
сѡце = <i>heart</i>	Нѡје = <i>Noah</i>

<sup>1</sup> N.B. these all take the *acc.*, e.g. ѐво га = *there he (or it) is*.

<sup>2</sup> *To hurry* is жѡрити, or жѡрити се, *ipfv.*, Class V, 1, also хѡтати, Class V, 2.

<sup>3</sup> N.B. слѡбодно also means *you may, it is allowed*; нѡје слѡбодно = *you mayn't*, besides having its literal meaning of *free, disengaged*.

<sup>4</sup> Also мѡр, тишина (= *quiet*).

<sup>5</sup> N.B. a *tea-cup* or *coffee-cup* is шѡља and шѡльица.

грăбити ( <i>ipfv.</i> , V, 1) = <i>to grab</i>	дијелити ( <i>ipfv.</i> , V, 1) = <i>to divide</i> <sup>2</sup>
продужити ( <i>ipfv.</i> , V, 1) = <i>to continue</i>	разговарати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = <i>to converse</i>
проговорити ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = <i>to say, to begin, to speak</i>	удавати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> , III, 2 a) = <i>to get married (of a girl)</i>
управљати ( <i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = <i>to govern</i>	женити се ( <i>ipfv.</i> , V, 1) = <i>to get married (of a man)</i>
променити ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = <i>to change (trans.)</i> <sup>1</sup>	састати се ( <i>pfv.</i> , cf. pp. 106-7) = <i>to meet</i>
ударати ( <i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = <i>to strike</i>	разбећи се ( <i>pfv.</i> , cf. pp. 106-7) = <i>to run apart</i>
звнути ( <i>pfv.</i> , II) = <i>to call once</i>	искрен = <i>sincere</i>
пливати ( <i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = <i>to swim</i>	сит = <i>satisfied</i>
растргнути ( <i>pfv.</i> , II) = <i>to pull apart</i>	
чист = <i>clean</i>	

### Reading Exercise

1. Плăтите му кѡлико трăжи пă ће вам рăдити. 2. Мѡлим вас ѡдите у Београд те свршите сáми тăј пѡсао. 3. Ни твѡј брăт нѡ може ѡћи. 4. Нă тѡ ствăр нѡмате прáво ни вѡ ни ѡни. 5. Пѡсле тѡга ни јă, ни ѡн, ни њѡгов брăт не проговѡрисмо ни рѡчи о тѡби. 6. Ѳни су одјѡдном променили и зѡмљу, и климу, и сѡседство, и нăчин живѡта и нăчин ѡправе. 7. Нѡ треба ѡправљати ни сăбљом, ни пѡшком, ни блăгом ни влăшћу вѡћ јѡдѡно ѡскреном ѡубављу. 8. Ѳди те га звни. 9.<sup>3</sup> Ѳли грми, ѡл' се зѡмља трѡсе, ѡл' ѡдара мѡре у брѡгове? Нѡти грми, нѡт' се зѡмља трѡсе, нѡт' ѡдара мѡре у брѡгове, вѡћ дијеле блăго свѡтитељи. 10.<sup>3</sup> Ѳли вѡлиш пѡ мѡру пливати, ѡли вѡлиш на вăтри гѡрети, ѡли вѡлиш дă те рăстргниѡмо? 11.<sup>3</sup> Донѡси ми јѡдну кѡпу вѡна, јăли вѡна, јăли вѡде хлăдне. 12. Вѡл' ти пѡти, вѡл' ти кăпу кѡпити. 13. Свѡ се рăзбегоше, кѡје пѡ шуми, кѡје пѡ пољу. 14. Дѡ-

<sup>1</sup> +се, *intrans.*

<sup>2</sup> In the *e*-dialect: дѡлити.

<sup>3</sup> From national Serbian poetry.

дер, рѣци ми гдѣ си био ? 15. Хѣјде-те сви ђвѣмо. 16. Како му драго <sup>1</sup> тек <sup>2</sup> ми ђстасмо и бѣз кола и бѣз коња, те продужисмо пут пешке. 17. Тек што смо се сѣстали кад ђн дђби заповест да се крѣне даље. 18. Тек (ог бар) ви ми немђјте ђ томе говђрити. 19. Јѣхачу, пијачу, жѣначу се, удавачу се до ђнога дана кад Нђје ује у ковчег. 20. Гђсти су сѣдели, јѣли, пили и разговарали се. 21. СтѢро и младо, жѣна и дѣте, свѣ ти <sup>3</sup> тђ ѣнглѣски говђри. 22. Бѣсмо ли код какве цркве или код мѢнастира, не умѣм казати. 23. А како да га се не бђјимо ? Њѣга, који се није никога бђјао ! 24. Благђ ђнима који су чѣстђга срца ! 25. Граби и ти од српти што гђд више мђжеш (proverb).

### English Sentences

1. Wait a little, while I am buying cigarettes. 2. Do you know how to swim ? 3. That cap is too small for you. 4. What is that monastery on that hill ? 5. Our country is very beautiful, but the climate is bad. 6. The guests are all sitting in the garden and drinking coffee and eating jam. 7. My sister married a Frenchman. 8. Her brother married a Russian. 9. He could not find his things anywhere. 10. Suddenly it began to thunder and lighten. 11. We started at 9 o'clock this morning and returned at 10 o'clock in the evening. 12. Some one is knocking on the door. 13. Did you come on foot ?—No, we rode. 14. Excuse me, I did not know that you are here. 15. Bring me an egg, a piece of bread, some butter, some salt, and a cup of coffee. 16. I never eat meat ; have you no fish or vegetables or cheese ? 17. Let us go to the theatre this evening. 18. Goodness gracious me, it is already 11 o'clock. 19. I think that the weather will change. 20. Last night there was a strong frost.

<sup>1</sup> 'However that may be,' 'be that as it may.'

<sup>2</sup> Nevertheless, the upshot was that.

<sup>3</sup> Ethic dative, quoted from a letter of Dositheus Obradović, who visited England in the eighteenth century.

## CHAPTER 34

## THE PARTICIPLES AND THE PASSIVE

SERBIAN possesses four participles : the present and past indeclinable participles, and the active and passive declinable past participles.

**I. Present Indeclinable Participle.**

This is formed from the 3rd pers. pl. of the present tense by adding the ending -ћи :

I. трéсѷћи (from трéсти).

II. тòнѷћи (from тòнути).

III. пìјѷћи (from пìти), пìшѷћи (from пìсати).

IV. ìмáјѷћи (from ìмати).

V. ÷чѷћи (from ÷чити).

This participle is only formed from *imperfective* verbs. It can only refer to the subject of the sentence and has adverbial use, e.g. òна је пѣвала ìдѷћи поред јѣзера = *she was singing (while) walking along the lake*.

From бìти the form of this participle is бѷдѷћи ; as an adjective this word means *the coming*, as does also ìдѷћи = *the following, the next*.

**II. Past Indeclinable Participle.**

This is formed from the inf. stem by adding to it -в, or more commonly -вши :

I. пòчѣв(ши), ÷зѣв(ши), cf. p. 105.

II. мѣтнѷв(ши), cf. p. 106.

III. чѷвши, пìсáвши.

IV. ìмáвши, чìтáвши, прìчáвши.

V. ÷чìвши, вѷдѣвши.

This participle can be formed from verbs of either aspect.

Its use is similar to that of the pres. indecl. part., e.g. мѣтнѹвши шѣшїр нѧ глѧву ѡн изѧѣ из куѣе = *having put his hat on his head he went out of the house*.

The participle бївши, from бїти = *to be*, is seldom used, but is common as an adjective meaning *the former, the late*.

From ѣти the form of this participle is ѣшавши<sup>1</sup>; also verbs of Class I with roots in a consonant insert -a-, e.g. трѣсѧвши, from трѣсти.

### III. The Active Declinable Past Participle.

The formation of this, and its use in forming the compound past tense, has already been described, cf. pp. 59, 148. This participle is often used impersonally in such sentences as играло се, пѣвало и пило до пѡ(ла) нѡѣи = *dancing, singing, and drinking was kept up till midnight*; у ѡвѡм зѣмљотрѣсу прѡпало је мнѡго хїљадѧ љѹди = *many thousand people perished in that earthquake*.

### IV. The Passive Declinable Past Participle.

This is formed from inf. stem by adding the endings -т, -та, -то; -н, -на, -но, and -ен, -ена, -ено; the words thus formed are declined like indefinite adjectives.

The endings -т, -та, -то are taken by verbs of Class I with an inf. stem ending in -е, e.g. пѡчѣт, пѡчѣта, пѡчѣто = *begun*, from пѡчѣти, ѹзѣт, &c. = *taken*, from ѹзѣти, and by all verbs of Class II, e.g. дїгнѹт, &c. = *lifted*, from дїгнѹти.

The endings -н, -на, -но are taken by all verbs with an inf. stem in -а, e.g. звѧн, &c. = *called*, from звѧти, брїјѧн, &c. = *shaved*, from брїјати, пїсан, &c. = *written*, from пїсати, чїтѧн, &c. = *read*, from чїтати (Class IV), дрїжѧн, &c. = *held*, from дрїжати.

The endings -ен, -ена, -ено are taken by verbs of Class I

<sup>1</sup> And also, of course, from all its compounds.

with roots in a consonant, whereupon г, к, х become ж, ч, ш, e.g. плѣтен, &c. = *plaited, knitted*, from плѣсти, cf. p. 105, сѣчен, &c. = *cut*, from сѣћи ; root сек-, cf. p. 105, and by the verbs of Class V, the roots of which also undergo changes because of the combination of -и, the last letter of the stem with the ending -ен, e.g. хва́лен, &c. = *praised*, from хва́лити (хвали + ен), ви́ђен, &c. = *seen* (from види + ен), вра́кен, &c. = *returned*, from вра́тити (врати + ен), пу́щен, &c. = *released*, from пу́стити (пусти + ен), у́чен, &c. (this is now considered an adjective = *learned*), from у́чити (учи + ен).

Verbs with stems in -у mostly take -ен, inserting -в- between the two, e.g. чу́вен, &c. (this also has become an adjective = *famous*), from чу́ти (чу + ен), обу́вен, &c. = *shod*, from обути се, Class III, 1a = *to put one's boots on* (обу + ен).

Verbs with stems in -и vary, e.g. ли́ти = *to pour*, ви́ти = *to wind*, Class III, 1a, have ли́т, ви́т, but more commonly ли́жен and ви́жен, and even ли́вен ; би́ти = *to beat*, of the same class, has би́жен, cf. уби́жен, from у́бити = *to kill*, and also, less usually, би́вен ; пи́ти = *to drink* has пи́жен, but N.B. *drunk* (= *intoxicated*) = пи́јан, but also на́пѣт чòвек = *a drunken man*.

Verbs with roots in -р also vary, e.g. за̀стрѣти (or за̀стрѣти) = *to cover over* (with a carpet, table-cloth) has за̀стрѣт, трѣти = *to rub* has трѣвен, e.g. утрѣвен пѹт = *well-trodden road, path*.

This participle is mostly used to take the place of the *passive*, which does not exist in Serbian as a separate voice.

The passive can be expressed either by the 3rd pers. pl. of the present, i.e. by a periphrasis, e.g. во̀лѣ га = *they like him* = *he is liked*, from во̀лети = *to like*, Class V, 2, or by this participle with би́ти = *to be*, e.g.

ја сам хваљен (or for fem. хваљена) or хваљен сам = *I am praised.*

ја сам био (fem. била) хваљен (fem. хваљена) or био сам хваљен (fem. била сам хваљена) = *I have been (or was) praised.*

ја ћу бити хваљен (fem. хваљена) or бићу хваљен (fem. хваљена) = *I shall be praised.*

буди хваљен (fem. хваљена) } = *be praised!*  
 будите хваљени (fem. хваљене) }

(ја) бих хваљен (fem. хваљена) = *I was praised (aorist).*

ја бехјах хваљен (fem. хваљена) = *I used to be or was being praised (imperfect).*

будући хваљен = *being praised.*

бивши хваљен = *having been praised.*

бити хваљен = *to be praised.*

This participle is frequently used impersonally in such sentences as : нађено је на њлици стô (хѣладу, N.B. acc.) дѣнāрā = 100 *dinars (frs.) were found in the street* ; ò томē је напѣсано мнôго (or пѣно) књѣгā = *many books have been written about that.*

### Vocabulary

Бôг = *God*

тāлāс = *wave*

сýсрет = *meeting*

рāзговор = *conversation*

жêћ = *thirst*

тýжан = *sorrowful*

чòвеков = *man's, human*

мѣо, мѣла = *nice, dear*

ѹмор = *fatigue*

количѣна = *quantity*

дòбро = *good (subst.)*

òтаѹбина = *fatherland*

чòвечāнство = *mankind*

ѹгледати (pfv., IV) = *to catch sight of*

путòвати (ipfv., III, 3) = *to travel*

прèпливати (ipfv., IV) = *to swim across*

нзнемòћи (pfv., I and II) = *to grow weak*

цѣнити ( <i>ipfv.</i> , V, 1) = to esteem <sup>1</sup>	учинити ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to do
òстарити ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to grow old	ра̀жалити се ( <i>pfv.</i> , V) = to take pity on
провòдити ( <i>ipfv.</i> , V, 1) = to spend (of time)	раст̀ужити се ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = ра̀жалити се
заспати ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 3) = to fall asleep	ск̀инути се ( <i>pfv.</i> , II) = (1) to jump down from, (2) to take off one's clothes
спáлити ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to burn up	изг̀убити се <sup>2</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to lose oneself, to disappear
ср̀ушити ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to pull down	мòлити се ( <i>ipfv.</i> , V, 1) = to pray (intrans.)

### Reading Exercise

1. Пу̀тују̀ћи та̀ко до̀ђе до̀ једне рѐке и ѝду̀ћи по̀ред њѐ срѐте се с једнѝм чòвеком кòји је јàхао на бѐлом кòњу. 2. Ч̀у̀ју̀ћи њѝхов ра̀зговòр òна изáђе прѐд њѝх и рече им да у̀ђу у̀ ку̀ђу. 3. По̀шáвши мáло дáље, (òн) до̀ђе до̀ једног сѐла. 4. Тò рекáвши, ск̀очи у̀ рѐку и прѐплива на др̀угу òбалу. 5. Глѐдају̀ћи је кòлико пáти, òн се веòма ра̀жали (ог раст̀ужи). 6. У̀гледáвши га прѐд собом на пу̀ту òн се òдмах ск̀иде<sup>3</sup> с кòла и по̀ђе му на с̀усрет. 7. Ск̀очѝвши у̀ рѐку òн се изг̀уби у̀ тáлáсина. 8. Òн је говòрио òстарелој мáјци. 9. Брáт је мѝо кòје<sup>4</sup> вѐре бѝо. 10. Òн клѐче прѐд ѝкону мòлећи се Бòгу да му дá срѐће. 11. И не ѝмају̀ћи нѝкаквa по̀сла про̀водили смо дáн у̀ шѐтњи по̀ бр̀дима и дол̀инама. 12. Изнѐмогаò од жѐђи и у̀мора лѐже на трáву и твр̀до зáспа. 13. Òн је т̀ужно глѐдаò свòје лѐпе ку̀ће спáљене и ср̀ушене. 14. Чòвеков ж̀ивот нѐ цѣни се по̀ вел̀иком брòју гòдѝнá, вѐћ по̀ колич̀ини дòбра уч̀ињенòг òтацòбини и чòвечáнству.

<sup>1</sup> цѣна = price.

<sup>2</sup> изг̀убити ог заг̀убити (*pfv.*) = to lose.

<sup>3</sup> Aorist of ск̀инути.

<sup>4</sup> Sc. ма кòје.



## Vocabulary

двѡр = <i>court</i>	полѡвина = <i>half</i>
нáрод = <i>people</i>	крѡв = <i>blood</i>
стрáжа = <i>guard</i>	дáнак = <i>tribute</i>
дѣнáр = <i>dinar, franc</i>	дáнак у крѡви = <i>lit. tribute in blood</i>
осуђенѣк = <i>condemned man</i>	Турчин (pl. Турци) = <i>Turk</i>
крађа = <i>thief</i>	влáжан = <i>damp</i>
вѣра = (1) <i>faith</i> , (2) <i>on parole</i> , also <i>on bail</i>	чѣтав = <i>whole, entire</i>
суд = <i>judgement, court of justice</i>	прáведан = <i>just, righteous</i>
оптужити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to accuse</i>	разнобѡжан = <i>of various colours</i>
пѡштовати (ipfv., III, 3) = <i>to esteem</i>	пѡставити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to place, to set</i>
ѡкитити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to adorn</i>	саградити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to build</i>
разгледати (pfv., IV) = <i>to look at, to examine</i>	украти (pfv., I, 1, root крад-) = <i>to steal</i>
урадити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to do</i>	стáти (pfv., cf. p. 106) = <i>to stand still</i>
судити (ipfv., V, 1) = <i>to judge</i>	стáло ми је до . . . = <i>I am anxious (e.g. to have)</i>

## Reading Exercise

1. Он је ѡптужен за крађу. 2. Он је био пѡштован ѡд свѡга нáрода. 3. Ливаде су ѡкићене разнобѡјним цвѣћем. 4. Да разгледáмо штá је досад урађено нà томе имању. 5. Сужено је дà се умре. 6. Сви путови су му ѡтворени. 7. Али јѡш није кáзано ѡно штѡ је нáјлепше. 8. Прѡшлога лѣта његова кўќа није била саградјена. 9. Пред двѡром су пѡстављене стрáже. 10. Стѡ је пѡстављен за рúчак. 11. Украдено му је стѡ дѣнáра. 12. Осуђеници ће бити пуштени (из зáтвора) на вѣру. 13. Пíтаће се на стрáшном суду кѡ је рáдно прáведно а кѡ не ! 14. Ако ти је стáло до полѡвине нáшега имања дáће ти се без рѣчи. 15. За нѣколико стѡтинá

гѡдинā пѡд Тўрцима у Срѡији се плаќао дāнак у крви.  
 16. Дѡбре књиге свўдā се чїтају. 17. Путовāло се по  
 чїтав дāн а ўвече се спāвало на влāжној зємљи. 18.  
 Цѣне га и хвāле нā све стрāне.

## CHAPTER 35

### THE ORDER OF WORDS AND THE FORMATION OF SUBORDINATE SENTENCES

THE order of words in Serbian in simple statements presents no difficulty, e.g. пишѣм писмо = *I am writing a letter*; стāнујѣм код свѡга пријатеља = *I am living at my friend's* (for the present of бїти and хтѣти, cf. pp. 31, 73). If the personal pronouns are retained, these precede the verb, e.g. ѡн чїта нѡвине, а ѡна пије кāву = *he is reading the newspaper, and she is drinking coffee*; мї седїмо, а вї стојїте = *we are sitting, and you are standing*.

In negations the negative particle не immediately precedes the verb, e.g. (jā) не разўмѣм ѡвў рѣч or ѡвў рѣч не разўмѣм = *I don't understand this word*; if a negative pronoun is added this usually begins the sentence, e.g. нїшта не разўмѣм (or не разўмѣм нїшта) = *I understand nothing*; нїкога нѣ видїм = *I see no one*; нїкад нѣ јашѣм = *I never ride*; не is not an enclitic, and therefore may begin the sentence.

The presents of the verbs бїти, їмати, and хтѣти are compounded with не, viz. нїсам, нѣмам, and нѣћу, cf. pp. 34, 74, 111.

In questions various orders of the words are possible, e.g. (1, assumption) вї разумѣте ѡвѡ or вї ѡвѡ разумѣте? = *you understand this?* (2, with the interrogative particle ли, which must follow the verb, being an enclitic) разумѣте ли

(вѣ) ђвѡ ? = *do you understand this ?* (if ли follows the personal pronoun it especially emphasizes it, e.g. ђн ли тѡ рѡди ? = *is it he who is doing this ?*); (3, with дѡ ли = *whether*) дѡ ли (вѣ) разумѣте ђвѡ ? or дѡ ли (вѣ) ђвѡ разумѣте ? = *do you understand this ?* (4, with зар, cf. p. 33); зѡр (вѣ) ђвѡ разумѣте ? = *do you really understand this ?* (cf. also p. 33).

In questions beginning with an interrogative pronoun or adverb the personal pronoun, if retained, follows it immediately, e.g. штѡ (вѣ) рѡдите ? = *what are you doing ?* штѡ (ђн) кѡже ? = *what does he say ?* гдѣ ђн стѡнује ? = *where is he staying ?* с кѣме ђна гѡвори ? = *with whom is she talking ?* In negative interrogations the order is : (вѣ) не разумѣте, не разумѣте ли (вѣ), or, most colloquially, зѡр (вѣ) не разумѣте ? = *don't you understand ?*

In simple sentences made with the compound tenses, i.e. the shortened parts of the auxiliary verbs бѣти and хтѣти, these latter, being enclitics, must *never* begin the sentence, e.g. дѡшли смо or мѣ смо дѡшли = *we have come* ; кѡзѡ је or ђн је кѡзѡ = *he (has) said (told)* ; мѣслино сам or јѡ сам мѣслино = *I thought* ; дѡћн ћемо or мѣ ћемо дѡћн = *we shall come* ; кѡзѡћу or јѡ ћу кѡзѡти = *I shall tell (say)* ; мѣслиће or ђн ће мѣслити = *he will think* : in general it may be said that the forms without the personal pronouns are far commoner.

When other words are added still greater variety is possible, e.g. (1) дѡшли смо јѡчѣ, or (2) мѣ смо дѡшли јѡчѣ, or (3) мѣ смо јѡчѣ дѡшли, or (4) јѡче смо дѡшли = *we came yesterday* ; (1) дѡћн ћу сѡтра, or (2) јѡ ћу дѡћн сѡтра, or (3) јѡ ћу сѡтра дѡћн, or (4) сѡтра ћу дѡћн = *I shall come to-morrow*.

When such sentences are negated only *one* order is possible, e.g. (мѣ) нѣсмо дѡшли = *we didn't come* ; (ђн)

није ка́зао = *he didn't say* ; (jâ) ни́сам мѡгао = *I couldn't* ; (мѡ) не́ћемо до́ћи = *we shall not come* ; (jâ) не́ћу ка́зати = *I shall not say* ; (ѡни) не́ће мѡћи = *they will not be able* ; i. e. preceded by не- these words are no longer enclitics.

When such sentences are made interrogative the most usual forms are : да́ ли сте (вѡ) чу́ли ? or, with the full form of the auxiliary, as сте and ли are both enclitics, је́сте ли (вѡ) чу́ли ? = *did you hear* ? but N.B. *on no account чу́ли ли сте (вѡ)* ; negatived this would be да́ ли <sup>1</sup> ни́сте (вѡ) чу́ли ? or ни́сте ли (вѡ) чу́ли ? = *didn't you hear* ?—да́ ли су (ѡни) до́шли or је́су ли (ѡни) до́шли ? = *have they come* ? за́р су (ѡни) до́шли ? = *have they really come* ? да́ ли <sup>1</sup> ни́су (ѡни) до́шли or ни́су ли (ѡни) до́шли or зар ни́су (ѡни) до́шли ? = *haven't they come* ? да́ ли је (ѡн) ѡтишао ? or је <sup>2</sup> ли (ѡн) ѡтишао ? = *has he gone away* ? да́ ли <sup>1</sup> ни́је ѡтишао ? = *hasn't he left* ? да́ ли ће́те (вѡ) до́ћи ? or хо́ћете ли (вѡ) до́ћи ? or вѡ ће́те до́ћи ? = *will you come* ? не́ћете ли до́ћи ? = *won't you come* ? за́р ће́те (вѡ) до́ћи ? = *will you really come* ? зар (вѡ) не́ћете до́ћи ? = *won't you really come* ? But it is important to remember that the infinitive after хтѣти is very frequently resolved into a subordinate clause introduced by да, cf. p. 208.

When such interrogative sentences are introduced by an interrogative pronoun or adverb, the auxiliary immediately follows this latter, e.g. шта́ сте (вѡ) ка́зали ? = *what did you say* ? (answer : ни́шта ни́сам ка́зао or ни́сам ка́зао ни́шта = *I said nothing*) ; ко́га сте (вѡ) пи́тали ? = *whom did you ask* ? (answer : ни́кога ни́сам пи́тао or ни́сам пи́тао ни́кога = *I asked no one* ; њѣга сам пи́тао or пи́тао сам

<sup>1</sup> In such phrases ли may be and usually is omitted.

<sup>2</sup> је́ ли *can* introduce a sentence, though је by itself cannot ; this does not apply to the other persons.

њèга = *I asked him*); гдè ћете станòвати? = *where shall you stay?* станòваћу у „Хòтел-Балкáну“ = *I shall stay in the 'Balkan Hotel'*; кáд ћете отпутовати? = *when will you depart?* кáд сте дòшли? = *when did you arrive?* гдè сте нàшли òвò? or гдè сте òвò нàшли? = *where did you find this?*

### Use of the reflexive Pronoun се

Examples of this have already been given, cf. pp. 114 ff. It may either precede or follow the verb, but, being an enclitic, cannot begin the sentence, e.g. бòјѝм се or јá се бòјѝм = *I am afraid*<sup>1</sup>; вàрáте се or вѝ се вàрáте = *you are mistaken*; нáдају се or òни се нáдају = *they hope*; negatived: не бòјѝм се or јá се не бòјѝм (*not* не се бòјѝм), не тýку се or òни се не тýку = *they are not fighting each other* (*not* не се тýку); put as a question: бојíte ли се? or вѝ се бојíte? or дá ли се бојíte? or зàр се (вѝ) бојíte? = *are you afraid?* as a negative question: нè вàрáте ли се? or вѝ се нè вàрáте? or дá ли<sup>2</sup> се (вѝ) нè вàрáте? or зàр се (вѝ) нè вàрáте? = *are you not mistaken?*

In questions beginning with an interrogative word the order is: чèга се (вѝ) бојíte? = *of what are you afraid?* чèму се (вѝ) смéјете? = *at what are you laughing?*

In the compound past tense се follows the enclitic auxiliary verb, e.g. прèварно сам се or јá сам се прèварно = *I made a mistake, I am wrong*; тýкли су се or òни су се тýкли = *they fought (each other)*; врати́ли смо се or мѝ смо се врати́ли = *we (have) returned*; in this tense it is very important to notice that the *affirmative* short form of the 3rd pers. sing. of бѝти is usually omitted, the combination се је or је се being avoided, e.g. врати́о се or òн се врати́о = *he (has)*

<sup>1</sup> N.B. This expression is not used so loosely as in English.

<sup>2</sup> ли may be omitted here.

*returned*; задòцнила се or òна се задòцнила = *she is late* (lit. *has lated herself*).

In the negative compound past tense the order is either òни се нíсу врати́ли or нíсу се врати́ли = *they have not returned* or *did not return*; ја се нíсам прèварно or нíсам се прèварно = *I was not wrong*; in the 3rd pers. sing. the order is: нíје се врати́о or òн се нíје врати́о = *he has not returned*; нíшта се нíје дèсило or нíје се нíшта дèсило = *nothing has happened* (i.e. нíје is retained, but је is omitted, cf. above and p. 203).

In the interrogative past tense the order is: òни су се врати́ли? or дà ли су се (òни) врати́ли? or јèсу ли се (òни) врати́ли? or зàр су се (òни) врати́ли? = *have they returned?* (N.B. *not* врати́ли ли су се, cf. p. 202); in the 3rd pers. sing.: дà ли се (òн) врати́о? or зàр се (òн) врати́о? or јè ли се (òн) врати́о? = *has he returned?*

The negative interrogative past is usually in this order, viz. зàр се (òни) нíсу врати́ли? (or нíсу ли се (òни) врати́ли? or òни се нíсу врати́ли?) = *have they not returned?* зàр се (òн) нíје врати́о? or нíје се (òн) врати́о? = *has he not returned?*

In questions beginning with an interrogative word the order is: кàд сте се (вî) врати́ли? = *when did you return?* чèму су се (òни) смèјали? = *what were they laughing at?* in the 3rd pers. sing.: штà се дèсило (or догòдило)? = *what has happened?* кàд се (òн) врати́о? = *when did he return?*

In the compound future tense се follows the enclitic auxiliary verb, e.g. ùмићу се or ја ћу се ùмити = *I am going to wash*; сàд ћу се ùмити = *now I am going to wash*; òдмах ће се (òн) врати́ти or врати́ће се òдмах, or òн ће се врати́ти òдмах, or òн ће се òдмах врати́ти = *he will return directly*; put negatively: òн се нèће врати́ти or нèће се врати́ти = *he*

*will not return*; put interrogatively: дă ли ќе се (Ѡн) врати́ти? or хѠће ли се (Ѡн) врати́ти? or Ѡн ќе се врати́ти? or зăр ќе се (Ѡн) врати́ти? = *will he return?* put negatively interrogatively: зăр се (Ѡн) неће врати́ти? = *won't he return?* with an interrogative word: кад ќете се врати́ти? = *when will you return?*

In such sentences also a subordinate clause beginning with да as often as not takes the place of the infinitive.

There is a peculiar tendency to place the verbal forms je and cy after the first word of the sentence, especially between pronoun and noun, instead of between subject and predicate, e.g. наше је село највеће у Ѡвоме крају = *our village is the biggest in this district*; њихови су родитељи вђло бѠгати = *their parents are very rich*, but this is considered bad style.

### Position of the enclitic Pronouns

The following examples show where these may be placed: вѠлим га or ја га вѠлим = *I like (or love) him*; вѠлим је or ја је вѠлим = *I like (or love) her*; вђди ме or Ѡн ме вђди = *he sees me*; вђдѠте or Ѡни те вђде = *they see thee*. нѠ волим га or ја га нѠ волим = *I don't like him*; нѠ видѠм је or ја је нѠ видѠм = *I don't see her*.

вѠлите ли је? or вђ је вѠлите? or дă ли је (вђ) вѠлите? = *do you like her?* пѠзнăје те ли га? or вђ га пѠзнăјете? or дă ли га (вђ) пѠзнăјете? = *do you know him (personally)?*

нѠ чујѠте ли га? or зăр га (вђ) нѠ чујѠте? = *don't you hear him?*

зăшто га (вђ) нѠ волите? = *why don't you like him?*

чуѠ сам га or ја сам га чуѠ = *I (have) heard him*; вђдели су ме or Ѡни су ме вђдели = *they saw (or have seen) me*.

нисам га чуѠ or ја га нисам чуѠ = *I did not hear (or have not*

heard him); нисмо је виђели ог ми је нисмо виђели =  
*we did not see (or have not seen her).*

јесте ли га (ви) виђели ? ог да ли сте га (ви) виђели ? ог  
 ви сте га виђели ? = *have you seen him ?*

нисте ли га нашли ? ог, better, зар га нисте нашли ? =  
*haven't you found him (or it) ?*

кад сте га виђели ? = *when did you see him ?*

гдѣ сте је нашли ? = *where did you find her (or it) ?*

виђећу га сѹтра ог сѹтра ћу га виђети ог ја ћу га виђети  
 сѹтра = *I shall see him to-morrow*; наћи ћу је ог ја ћу  
 је наћи = *I shall find her (or it)*; ви ћете ме наћи =  
*you will find me.*

нећете га наћи ог ви га нећете наћи = *you won't find him*  
 (or it); нећу га пустити ог ја га нећу пустити = *I won't*  
*let him go.*

хоћете ли га (ви) виђети сѹтра ? ог да ли ћете га (ви) сѹтра  
 виђети ? = *shall you see him to-morrow ?*

зар је нећете пољубити ? = *are not you going to kiss her ?*

кад ћете га виђети ? = *when shall you see him ?*

пише ми ог он ми пише = *he writes (to) me.*

не пише ми ог он ми не пише = *he doesn't write to me.*

пишете ли му ? ог да ли му (ви) пишете ? ог ви му  
 пишете ? = *do you write (or are you writing) to him ?*

зашто ми не пишете ? = *why don't you write to me ?*

написао <sup>1</sup> сам му писмо ог ја сам му написао писмо =  
*I have written him a letter*; (писао <sup>1</sup> сам му = *I have*  
*written him).*

нисам му написао писмо ог ја му нисам написао писмо =  
*I haven't written him a letter* (нисам му писао = *I have*  
*not written him).*

<sup>1</sup> Remember : писати (*ipfv.*) = *to write (generally)*; написати  
 (*pfv.*) писмо ог карту = *to write a letter or a card.*



жèстè ли му напи́сали пи́смо ? ор дאַ ли стè му (вѣ) напи́-  
сали пи́смо ? = *have you written him a letter ?*

жèстè ли́ му пи́сали ? = *have you written him ?*

ни́стè ли му пи́сали ? ор зאַр му (вѣ) ни́стè пи́сали ? =  
*have you not written to him ?*

кאַд стè му (вѣ) пи́сали ? = *when did you write to him ?*

пи́саѣу му ор жאַ ѣу му пи́сати = *I shall write to him.*

нèѣу му пи́сати ор жאַ му нèѣу пи́сати = *I shall not write to  
him.*

хóѣтè ли му (вѣ) пи́сати ? ор дאַ ли ѣтè му (вѣ) пи́сати ? =  
*are you going to write to him ?*

зאַр му (вѣ) нèѣтè пи́сати ? = *are you not going to write to  
him ?*

кאַд ѣтè му пи́сати ? = *when are you going to write to him ?*

With reflexive verbs which take the *dative* the order is :  
тò ми се (ведма ор мнòго) дòпада = *I like that (very much)* ;  
тò ми се не дòпада = *I don't like that* ; дòпадאַ ли вам се тò ?  
ор дאַ ли вам се тò дòпада ? = *do you like that ?* кאַко вам се  
тò дòпада ? = *how do you like that ?* тò ми се дòпало (from  
дòпасти) = *I liked that* (je omitted) ; тò ми се нèје дòпало =  
*I didn't like that* ; тò ми се мнòго дòпало = *I liked that very  
much* ; тò ѣе вам се дòпасти = *you will like that* ; тò вам се  
нèѣе дòпасти = *you won't like that.*

When there are two pronouns, that in the *dat.* precedes  
that in the *acc.*, e.g.

шאַлѣм му га ор жאַ му га шאַлѣм = *I am sending it him*  
(i.e. any *masc.* or *neut.* thing).

дào сам му га ор жאַ сам му га дào = *I have given it him.*

жèстè ли му га дאַли ? ор вѣ стè му га дאַли ? ор дאַ ли стè  
му га дאַли ? = *did you give it him ?*

If reference is made to a *fem.* thing, je is used, e.g. дào  
сам му je, but as this je is the same in form as je = *is* (from

бѣти), it must be replaced by the alternative form for *her*, viz. ју, in sentences which contain је = *is*, e.g. *did he give it you* (se. *the book*, књѣга, *fem.*)? = да ли вам ју је дао? or, better, је ли вам дао књѣгу? or да ли вам је дао књѣгу?

Otherwise је is always preferred, e.g. јесте ли је ви видели? or ви сте је видели? = *did you see* (or *have you seen*) *her*?

### Note

The English idiom *shall I . . .* must be rendered as follows : да вам напем<sup>1</sup> још једну шољу кафе? = *shall I pour you out another cup of coffee?* i. e. by the present of a perfective verb and да ; да му дам ову књѣгу? = *shall I give him this book?* да одемо вечерас у кинематограф? = *shall we go to the cinematograph this evening?*

### Wishes

*Wishes* are expressed by the conjunction нека or да followed by the present or the conditional, e.g. да би Бог дао or нека да Бог! = *may God grant!* N.B. да = 3rd pers. sing. pres. of даѣти = *to give*, must not be confused with the conjunction да. Да живи наш народ! = *long live our nation!* The past participle active is also used in such expressions, e.g. живео! = *long live!* (N.B. живела! *fem.*).

## The Formation of Subordinate Sentences

### ДА

1. After the verbs хѣти, моћи, морати, трѣбати, имати (in the sense *to have to*) and certain others, the infinitive, which is usual in other languages, is not incorrect in Serbian, but its place is most frequently taken by a subordinate clause

<sup>1</sup> Pres. of насути, *pfv.*, Class I, 2, cf. p. 105.

introduced by да and the verb in the present; whether a perfective or imperfective present is used of course depends on the meaning.

Examples of such sentences have already been given on pp. 89, 117 f., 131, 134. A few more are added here: хòѣу да ñдѣм вечѣрас у пòзорїште = (1) *I shall go to the theatre this evening*, or (2) *I want to go to the theatre this evening*; кàд ћете да дòћете? = *when will you come?* мòрãм да òдѣм = *I must go*; нѣ могу да вїдїм = *I cannot see*; штà ћемо да рãдимо? = *what shall we do?*

In such sentences if the object of the second verb is тò (= *that*), this is frequently placed in the principal sentence, e.g. нѣ могу тò да рãдїм = *I cannot do that*; хòѣу тò да ùчинїм = *I shall do that*; мòрао сам тò да му кãжѣм = *I had to tell him that*; but N.B. мòрãм да га (or је) вїдїм = *I must see him (or her)*.

2. Да is used to introduce the subordinate clause after all verbs of *declaring, believing, hearing, seeing, commanding, wishing, &c.*, e.g. кãжѣм вам да сам бòлестан = *I tell you that I am ill (masc.)*, кãжу да је нѣко дòшао = *they say that some one has come*; кáзао сам му дã је тò ñстина = *I told him that this was the truth*; кáзали су ми да òна нїје кòд куће = *they told me that she was not at home* (N.B. in Serbian in such clauses the present must always be used, the past would refer to the remote past); мїслите ли да ће (òн) дòћи? = *do you think (that) he will come?* нãдãм се да ћете ми тò учинити = *I hope (that) you will do this for me*; вїдїм да не рãзумѣте у чѣму је ствãр = *I see that you don't understand what the matter is about (lit. is in)*; чўо сам да је (òна) врљо бòлесна = *I have heard (= I hear) (that) she is very ill*; рѣкао му сам да дòђе штò прѣ = *I told him to come as soon as possible*; хтѣо сам да вам кãжѣм = *I wanted to tell you*. In

all such sentences the conjunction is virtually essential, and must not be omitted, as frequently in English.

3. Followed by *ли, да* = *whether*, e.g. *нè знāм дā ли је она кōд куће* = *I don't know whether ('if') she is at home*. For the use of *дā ли* in direct questions, cf. pp. 58, 70.

4. *Да* preceded by *кāо* expresses *comparison*, e.g. *ўмōран сам кāо да сам кōла вўкао* = *I am (as) tired as if I had pulled a carriage*.

5. *Да* is used to express a *result*, e.g. *јā сам толїко (or толїко сам) ўмōран да не мōгу нїшта дā рāдїм* = *I am so tired that I can do nothing*.

6. *Да* is used to express a *purpose*, e.g. *дōшли смо дā разгōвāрамо с вāма* = *we have come (in order) to talk with you*; *пїсао сам му да дōзнāм їстину* = *I have written him in order to learn the truth*; when the subject of the clause is not the same as that of the principal sentence the conditional is used, e.g. *пїсао му сам да би бн дōзнао їстину* = *I have written him in order that he may learn the truth*.

*In order that* is sometimes rendered by *нєка* as well as by *да*, e.g. *мєт(н)ите мōје ципеле крај вāтре нека (or дā) се сўше* = *put my boots (or shoes) near the fire to get dry*.

7. *Да* is used to express an *unreal condition*, e.g. *дā сам знāо да сте бōлесни дōшао бих рāније да вас вїдїм* = *if I had known that you are ('were') ill, I should have come to see you sooner*; *дā сам мōгао јā бих тō учїнио* = *if I had been able I should have done this*.

8. As Serbian has no declinable (adjectival) present participles, and no construction such as the 'acc. and inf.', sentences such as 'I see him coming' are paraphrased with *да*, whereupon the object is put in the principal sentence, e.g. *вїдїм га да (or N.B. где) дōлази* = *I see him coming*; *чўјем је да (or N.B. где) пєва* = *I hear her singing*.

## ШТÒ

9. After verbs of *feeling*, when any cause of the emotion is expressed, штò is used to introduce the clause, e.g. рàдујѐм се штò сте дòшли = *I am very glad that you have come*; жàо ми је штò га нíсам вíдео = *I am sorry that I did not see him*.

## ЈѐР—ЗàТО ШТÒ—ПòШТО

10. *Cause* is also expressed by jèp or zàto штò and пòшто, e.g. нè могу да пíшѐм jèp (or zàto штò) нѐмàм ни пѐра ни мàстила = *I cannot write because I have neither pen nor ink*; вòлím га jèp је (òн) ìскрен = *I like him because he is sincere*; пòшто нѐмàм нòвца нè могу путòвати = *since I have no money I cannot travel*.

## ПòШТО

11. Пòшто also = *after*, e.g. тò се дѐсило пòшто сте вí òтишли = *that happened after you went away*.

## ПРѐ НЕГО ШТÒ

12. *Before* is rendered by прѐ него штò, or прѐ нѐго, or прѐ но штò, e.g. тò се дѐсило прѐ него штò смо дòшли = *that happened before we came*.

## ЧíМ

13. *As soon as* is rendered by чíм (or чíм), e.g. изàћи ћемо (крѐнућемо се) чíм прѐстане (or стàне) кíша = *we shall go out (we shall start) as soon as the rain stops*.

## ДòК (НЕ)

14. *While* = дòк, *until* = дòк не, e.g. док вí пíшете пíсмо jà ћу пúшити = *while you are writing the letter I shall smoke*; чѐкаћу вас óвде док нѐ дòђете = *I shall wait (for) you here till you come*.

## КАД

15. The conjunction ка̀д=(1) *when*, and (2) with the conditional, *if in eventual conditions*, e.g. (1) ја̀вите ми ка̀д ќете да до̀ђете = *let me know when you are coming*, —ка̀д до̀ђете would = —*when you come*; ра̀доваћу се кад се сврши двāј по̀сао = *I shall be glad when this work is finished*; (2) ја̀ бих то учинио кад бих мо̀гао = *I should do this if I could*, but N.B. in unreal (past) or future (real) conditions да̀ and а̀ко must be used, cf. next paragraph, and p. 210.

## АКО

16. *If* is rendered by а̀ко in past, present, or future *real conditions* and by а̀ко with the conditional in future *eventual conditions*, e.g. ха̀јдемо(те) а̀ко сте го̀тови = *let us go if you are ready*; бићу вам вр̀ло за̀хва̀лан а̀ко ми то̀ учини́те = *I shall be very grateful to you if you do this for me*; а̀ко сте прѹчитали књигу врати́те ми је = *if you have read the book (through) return it to me*; а̀ко би он до̀шао ја̀вите ми = *if he should come, let me know*.

## ПРЕМДА—МАДА—ИАКО

17. *Although, even if* are rendered by the compound conjunctions прѐмда, ма̀да, and иа̀ко (or и а̀ко), e.g. он је до̀шао прѐмда (or ма̀да or иа̀ко) сам му рѐкла да̀ остане ко̀д ку̀ће = *he came (or has come) although I (fem.) told him to stop at home*.

18. *Relative clauses* are introduced by the relative pronoun ко̀ји = *which*, or conjunctions such as ка̀о што̀ = *as*, ка̀ко = *how*, e.g. чо̀век ко̀ји је до̀шао тра̀жи вāшега брāта = *the man who has come is looking for your brother*; сѐло ко̀је ви́дите је на̀ше = *the village which you see is ours*; for the oblique cases of the masculine ко is used, e.g. чо̀век ко̀га ви́дите је мо̀ј брāт = *the man whom you see is my brother*.

Frequently што is used for a general relative if the relative pronoun is in the *nom.* or *acc.*, e.g. донео сам вам књигу штò (for кòју) сте тражили = *I have brought you the book which you wanted (lit. sought)*; данас сам ви́део òну гòспођу штò (for кòја) је снòћ пèвала = *I saw the lady to-day who sang at our house last night*; каò што сам вам кáзао . . . = *as I told you . . .*; нèје хтèо да ми кáже ка̀ко је дòшао до тòга нòвца = *he would not tell me how he came by that money*; што ви́ше то (or тìм = *by so much*) бòље = *the more the better*; у кòлико ви́ше учíte у толико ва́ше знáте (or у толико ћете ви́ше знáти) = *the more you learn the more you (will) know*; дòклè здрáвља ìмáте дòтле сте и срèћни = *to what extent you have health to that extent also you are happy (fortunate)*; кòлико јá знáм = *as far as I know*; for as concerns cf. p. 120.

19. The expressions тàмàн што and тèк што followed by кáд = *barely . . . when . . .*, e.g. тàмàн (or тèк) што смо сèли да се òдморìмо кад òни нам наредíше да се крèнемо дáље = *barely had we sat down to rest when they ordered us to go on farther*.

20. Ёмáло (штò) + a negative = *almost*, e.g. ёмáло штò нíсам пàо ў воду = *I very nearly fell into the water (little was wanting that)*; ёмáло не забòравих да вам тò кáжем = *I almost forgot to tell you that*; зàмáло што пòбеда нèје била нáша = *the victory was almost ours*; зàмáло па да пòбеда бýде нáша = *the victory is almost ours*.

As regards the order of words in a subordinate sentence the following points may be noted: (1) the short forms of the verb бити follow *immediately* after the conjunction, e.g. мислím да је òвā кўћа њèгова својíна = *I think (that) this house is his property*; ви́дím да сте (ви) ўмòрни и нèзадовòљни = *I see that you are tired and displeased*; (2) other

verbs usually follow the conjunction as closely as possible, but separated by the personal pronoun, if this is retained, e.g. чӯо сам да (ви) пїшете једну књїгу = *I have heard that you are writing a book*; знām да овāj господин пїше једну књїгу = *I know that this man is writing a book*; вїдїм шта (ви) рāдите = *I see what you are doing*; нє знām шта рāди овāj ђāk = *I don't know what this schoolboy is doing*; нє знām кōлико кōшта ова слїка = *I don't know how much this picture costs*; (3) in the compound past and future tenses the parts of the auxiliary verbs бїти and хтєти must follow immediately after the conjunction, the personal pronouns, if retained, coming next, e.g. отишао сам кād сам чӯо да је бōлесна = *I went away when I heard that she was (N.B. lit. is) ill*; дōшао сам чїм сам чӯо да сте бōлесни = *I came as soon as I heard that you were ill*; чӯјєм да сте (ви) бїли дāнас кōд њїх = *I hear that you have been at their house to-day*; нїсам знāо да су они бїли дāнас у вāроши = *I did not know that they had been in the town to-day*; знām да је она кўпила нōв шєшїр = *I know that she has bought a new hat*; мїслїм да ће (он) дōћи = *I think that he will come*; мїслїм да ће дāнас пāдати кїша = *I think it is going to rain to-day*; (4) the reflexive pronoun follows immediately after the conjunction in the present, e.g. нāдам се да се (ви) дōбро оdmāрате = *I hope that you are having a good rest*, but in the compound past and future tenses comes between the auxiliary and the verb (or the personal pronoun if retained), e.g. нє знām дā ли су се (они) врāтили = *I don't know whether they have returned*; мїслїм да сам се (jā) прєварно = *I think I have made a mistake (am wrong)*; нє знāмо кād ћемо се (ми) врāтити = *we do not know when we shall return* (or : кād ћемо да се врāтимо); мїслїм да ће вам се дōпасти овā књїга = *I think that you will like this book*; the 3rd person



singular *je* is always omitted in such sentences, e.g. *mī smo òtišli pōšto se tō dēsilo = we went away after that happened.*

## CHAPTER 36

## READING EXERCISE

## Vocabulary

сестрица = *sister*  
 господār = *master*  
 родитељ = *father*  
 мўва or мўха = *fly*  
 зрāk = *ray*  
 пиће = *beverage*  
 љубичица = *violet*  
 мārва = *cattle*  
 тѡп = *gun*  
 кўћица = *small house*  
 òгњийште = *fireplace*  
 нāручје = *lap*  
 зāлогāj = *mouthful*  
 осекāње = *sense, feeling*  
 слобѡда = *freedom*  
 милīна = *love*

прѡмаја = *draught*  
 бѡрба = *fighting, struggle*  
 зāход = *setting* (of the sun)  
 бѡс = *barefooted*  
 дѣтињаст = *childish*  
 òчев = *father's*  
 жалѡстан = *pitiful*  
 скрѡман = *modest*  
 нѣбескї = *heavenly*  
 мўдар = *wise*  
 свѣстан = *conscious*  
 нāционāлан = *national*  
 ўрођен = *born, native of*  
 крѡвāv = *bloody*  
 нѡследњї = *last*  
 сїлан = *strong*

твѡрити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to carry out, to accomplish*  
 вāдити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to take out*  
 прāштати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to forgive*  
 приличити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to suit, to become*  
 јѣчати (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to groan*  
 рѡнити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to undermine, to erode*

засāдити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to plant*  
 понāшати се (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to behave*  
 прѡпасти (*pfv.*, I and II) = *to perish*  
 ўлазити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to enter*  
 отрчати (*pfv.*, V, 3) = *to run off*  
 пробўдити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to waken*  
 обāsјати (*pfv.*, IV) = *to shine round*

затрѣпати ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 3) = to <i>blink</i>	поседати ( <i>pfv.</i> , IV) = to <i>sit in</i> <i>turn</i>
пониѣти ( <i>pfv.</i> , I, cf. p. 105) = <i>to take with one</i>	враћати се ( <i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = to <i>return</i> (cf. p. 120)
напáјати ( <i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = to <i>delight</i>	òгрејати се ( <i>pfv.</i> , III, 2 a) = to <i>warm oneself</i>
смр̀кнути се ( <i>pfv.</i> , 1I) <sup>1</sup> = to <i>grow dark</i>	задáвити се ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to <i>choke</i>
свáнути се ( <i>pfv.</i> , II) = to <i>dawn</i>	нáмучити се ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to <i>be</i> <i>in pain</i>
наоблáчити се <sup>2</sup> ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = <i>to cloud over</i>	нау́чити се ( <i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to <i>learn</i>

1. Вода је најздравије пиће. 2. Синоћ сам била у врту бөрѹћи љубичице све док се видело. 3. Кад смо стигле кѹћи сунце је било на заходу. 4. Ви сте биле на мосту кад смо ми биле на брегу. 5. Лако је говорити али је тешко творити. 6. И жедан сам и гладан (сам). 7. Јесте ли много гладни?—Јесмо. 8. Ја једно пита́м а би друго одговара́. 9. Ја псе́то из бунара ва́дим а онò ме уједá. 10. Смр̀кло се, а њих још нема. 11. Свáнуло је ода́вно, а ми се још нисмо кренуле. 12. Небо се страшно наоблáчило, изгледа да ће па́дати киша. 13. Ва́ља пра́штати и непријатељу. 14. Не при́личи му да се пона́ша детиња́сто. 15. Тòп за то́пòм гр̀ми, јечи, сèва. 16. Бòг нè да једноме човеку свá дòбра. 17. Тиха вода брèг рòни. 18. Лèти кáо мýва без гла́ве. 19. Ма́јке нeмáм а сестрице нeмáм. 20. Овудá су прòшла трé бòса дeтeтa. 21. Вáтра и водá су дòбре слýге али злè господáри. 22. Крòз отворену кáпију улази мáрва, вра́кајѹћи се спòља. 23. Око кѹће било је за́сађено силно<sup>3</sup> вòће. 24. Дá ти ни́је мeне бiло тi би прòпао. 25. Мíло ми је штò сте дòшли. 26. Небо

<sup>1</sup> The *ipfv.* of this verb is смр̀кавати се, Class IV.

<sup>2</sup> From облáк = *cloud*.

<sup>3</sup> A lot of.

и море беху мирни када смо улазили у пристаниште.  
 27. У последњој борби погинуло је више од двеста војника.  
 28. Спрам наше куће преко потока живела су три брата  
 у скрмној кућици. 29. Обдица отрчаше у шуму.  
 30. У по ноћи нешто ме пробуди њенада. 31. Кад  
 уђоше у кућу на огњишту није имало (ог било) ватре да се  
 огреју. 32. Сви поседаше њаоколо под један густѝ  
 и широкѝ храст. 33. Ништа није човеку жалосније него  
 кад страда од својѝх пријатеља. 34. Најгори је залогѝ  
 којѝм се човек задово. 35. С тебе срећу изгубила нисам,  
 ни са себе ни са своје старе мајке, ни са свога старе  
 родитеља. 36. Ко се не намучи тај се не научи. 37.  
 Идите у село што је пред вама. 38. Пред капијом су  
 трѝја кола. 39. Отворена су трѝја врата ; страшна је  
 прѝмаја. 40. После очеве смрти њихова мати остала је  
 са шесторо деце. 41. Кажу нам да је дошао један  
 (ог неки) човек, који вас тражи. 42. Једном стаде отац  
 разговарати са својѝм синѝвима. 43. Тамо, где те је  
 сунце зрацима прѝви пут обасјало и звезде ти с небеског  
 свода прѝви пут затрепале ; тамо, где те је мајка прѝви  
 пут од милѝне у наручју понела, а отац ти мудрим рѝчи-  
 ма срѝце напѝјао :—тамо је твоја отаѝбина ! 44. У свѝма  
 временѝма Срѝби су били и остали свѝсни својѝх наѝцио-  
 налѝних прѝва и слобѝде. 45. Вековима су трајале  
 борбе за прѝва и слобѝду Срѝског Народа. 46. Урођено  
 осећање за прѝво и слобѝду често је водило Срѝбе у крѝаве  
 борбе за прѝва и слобѝду дрѝгих. 47. Не<sup>1</sup> само<sup>1</sup> да  
 нисмо могли, него<sup>1</sup> нисмо ни хтели да забѝдравѝмо своја  
 прѝва. 48. Моја врата су отворена не само вама него  
 и сваком поштѝном човеку. 49. Ви сте свѝсни својѝх  
 прѝва, ѝли јесте ли свѝсни и својѝх дѝжнѝстѝ ?

<sup>1</sup> не само . . . него . . . = *not only . . . but . . .*

## CHAPTER 37

## READING EXERCISE

## Vocabulary

кѣраљ = <i>king</i>	мўка = <i>pain</i>
мѡмче = <i>boy</i>	вѣрност = <i>loyalty</i>
јўнѡк = <i>hero</i>	пѣвод = <i>translation</i>
сўдија = <i>judge</i>	пѣвоћѣње = <i>act of translating</i>
стѡрац = <i>old man</i>	злѡ = <i>evil</i>
стѡрателъ } = <i>tutor, guardian</i>	врућина = <i>heat</i>
стѡралац }	страх = <i>terror</i>
лѡбўд = <i>swan</i>	срамѡта = <i>shame</i>
кѡњѡц = <i>steed</i>	прѡст = <i>simple</i>
бѣрк = <i>moustache</i> (pl. бѣркови)	спѡр = <i>slow</i>
стрўк = <i>wais, figure</i> <sup>1</sup>	дѡстижан = <i>who achieves his</i>
рўно = <i>fleece</i>	<i>object</i>
жўто = <i>corn, cereals</i>	сѡколов = <i>falcon's</i>
(п)шѣница = <i>wheat</i>	свѣтї = <i>holy</i>
крїло = <i>wing</i> ; also <i>lap</i>	тѡнак = <i>thin</i>
натпис = <i>inscription</i>	смѣћ = <i>dark (colour)</i>
кѡмѣн = <i>stone</i>	дугўласт = <i>oval</i>
бѣлег = <i>sign</i>	сўв (or сўх) = <i>dry</i>
грѡб = <i>grave</i>	пѡдугачак = <i>rather long</i>
стѣна = <i>rock</i>	кўкаст = <i>curved</i>
дѡла or дѡља = <i>valley</i>	намргоћен = <i>frowning</i>
врѣло or ѡзвѡр = <i>spring</i> (of	пўн = <i>full</i>
<i>water</i> )	вѣрен = <i>engaged (to be married)</i>
лўка = <i>bay</i>	тўћ = <i>strange</i>
гѡра = <i>forest</i> (on a hill)	гѡ, гѡла = <i>naked</i>
свѣт = (1) <i>world</i> , (2) <i>people</i>	дѣснї = <i>right hand</i>
ѡме = <i>name</i>	ѡбїлан = <i>plentiful</i>
дўх = <i>spirit</i>	свѡкојѡки = <i>of every kind</i>
скѡк = <i>jump</i>	Ѓмн = <i>Amen</i>
рѡдѡст = <i>joy</i>	нѡздравље = <i>to your health</i>

<sup>1</sup> N.B. стрўка = *profession, trade*.

напушити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to fill*  
 утрчати (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to run*  
*into*

спасти (*pfv.*, I, 1, root спас-) = *to save*

пазити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to notice*,  
*to look out*

пресудити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to de-*  
*cide*

изнети (*pfv.*, I, *irr.*) = *to bring*  
*out*

научити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to learn*  
 сметати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to prevent*  
 прободати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to pierce*  
 опростити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to for-*  
*give*

заसेјати (*pfv.*, III, 2 a) = *to sow*  
 нагрејати се (*pfv.*, III, 2 a) = *to*  
*warm oneself thoroughly*

веселити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to be*  
*merry*

1. Рука рѹку мѣје, а обрѹз обдѹвѣје (proverb). 2. На гробу му стоји и сад белег, прѹст камен без ѣкаква напшса. 3. Бог је спѹр, али дѹстижан. 4. Оно је двѹр краља Пѹтра. 5. Ово је кѹќа мѹје тѹтке. 6. Дај ми, Бѹже, ѹчи соколове и бѣјела крила лабѹдова. 7. Ў име ѹца и сѣна и свѹтогѹ дѹха ! Амин ! 8. Дѹђе мѹмче црна ѹка на кѹњѣцу лака скѹка. 9. Нѹегов ѹтац је чѹвек дѹбре рѹке. 10. Вѣдео сам јѹдног старца беле кѹсе и брѹде. 11. Он је бѣо тѹнка и висѹка стрѹка, смѹђе кѹсе и врло малѣх брѹкѹвѹ, дугѹљастѣх сѹвѣх ѹбрѹзѹ, шѣрѹких ѹста и пѹдугачка, малѹ кѹкаста нѹса. 12. Ўмам дѹста вѣна и рѹкије. 13. Ўђе намрѹѹен не рѹкавши рѹчи. 14. Јѹданѹестога ѹвгуста ѹдѹђе гѹдине напунѣкѹ трѣдесет гѹдѣна. 15. Она ѹтрча пѹна рѹдѹсти и рѹче да је вѹрена. 16. Сѣдите да се сѹнца <sup>1</sup> нагрејѹмо. 17. Бог ќе га спасти мѹке и смрѹти. 18. Ўво вам вѹшѹг брѹга. 19. Нѣсам, мајко, жѣвѹта ми мѹга <sup>2</sup> ! 20. Не ѹдри <sup>3</sup> га, тѹко ти Бѹга <sup>4</sup> ! 21. У прѹвођѹњу свѹке

<sup>1</sup> Gen. sing.

<sup>2</sup> ‘ I didn’t (do it), mother, upon my life ! ’ ми = *to me* is redundant in English. This is a common saying : жѣвѹта ми alone = ‘ upon my word ’.

<sup>3</sup> Imper. of ѹдарити = *to strike*.

<sup>4</sup> Lit. ‘ thus to thee of God ’ = *in God’s name*.

књиге трѣба пазити на вѣрност превода. 22. Има људи који би пристали то да ураде. 23. Има нас свакојакѣх ! 24. Хајдемо суду да нам пресуди. 25. Изнесите ми нове хаљине. 26. Невоља свачему човека научи. 27. Отворите му врата да љђе. 28. Мили Бѣже, помози свакOME, свакOM брату и добру јунѣку. 29. Којој овци руно смѣта, онде није ни овце ни руна (proverb). 30. Не верује ни својим рђеним очима. 31. Ко се туђем зљу весели, нек се свOME нада. 32. Нико сам себи не може бити судија. 33. Овај човек је старатељ ономе сирот(н)ом детету. 34. Нека ти је наздравље. 35. Благо мајци која га родила. 36. Чисту образу мало воде трѣба. 37. Врућина ми је. 38. Ја обихох многе доле, многе реке, многа врела,—горе, луке, стене голе, многе дворе, многа села. 39. Нега није страх од смрти. 40. Срамота га (је) било да љђе. 41. Пробада ме с десе стране. 42. Мили Бѣже, на свему ти хвала. 43. Оче, опрости ми. 44. Ми пишемо руком и пером. 45. Он отиде земљом и свијетом. 46. Недељом идемо у цркву. 47. Ко је тебе поставио судијом над нама. 48. Будите задовољни оним што имате. 49. Она љива је засејана пшеницом. 50. Србија је обилна житом.

## CHAPTER 38

## READING EXERCISE

## Vocabulary

Дунав = *Danube*  
 Сава = *Save*  
 рѣтѣр = *farmer*  
 звѣр = *beast*  
 рѣна = *wound*<sup>1</sup>

прѣја = *maize-bread*  
 погача = *unleavened bread*  
 пѣра = *coin* (a centime)  
 дим = *smoke*  
 врх = *top, summit*

<sup>1</sup> N. B. (x)рѣна = *food*.

околина = *district, neighbour-  
hood*

рѣмски = *Roman*

мѡћ = *might*

мнѡштво = *quantity*

незнáње = *ignorance*

ýслов = *condition*

пѡговѡр = *contradiction*

шáла = *joke*

зáвист = *envy*

бѡј = *battle*

несреќа = *misfortune*

мѣсаѡ = *thought*

пѣркѡс = *spite*

лѣд = *foolish, silly, mad*

напѣстити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to  
leave*

осѣдити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to con-  
demn*

познáвати (*ipfv.*, III, 2 a) =  
*to know*

чѣвати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to keep*

упропáстити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to  
destroy*

гѡнити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to pursue*

пѡгледати (*pfv.*, IV) = *to throw  
a glance*

спѣстити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to  
lower, to put down*

ѡпрати (*pfv.*, I, 3) = *to wash*

пѡпѣти се (*pfv.*, III, 1 b) =  
(1) *to climb*, (2) *to be impor-  
tunate, to 'keep on about'*

дрѣжити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to  
keep company with*

постѣдети се (*pfv.*, V, 2) = *to  
be ashamed*

наднѣти се (*pfv.*, cf. p. 105) =  
*to bend*

дáти се (*pfv.*, *irr.*) = *to be  
plunged*

крѣти се (*ipfv.*, III, 1 a) = *to  
hide (intrans.)*

свáдити се } (*pfv.*, V, 1) =  
зáвадити се } *to quarrel*

1. Нáша кѣќа је ѣ пољу. 2. Прѣд цѣрквом стáјáше  
мнѡштво свѣта. 3. Глѣдáјте<sup>1</sup> тѣ се врáтите прѣ нѡќи.  
4. Од јѣче је јѣднáко<sup>2</sup> у грѡзници. 5. Ѧвáј вѡјник је  
ѣмрѡ од рáнá. 6. Јѣсте ли ѡво учѣнили нáмерно ѣли из  
незнáња? 7. По њѣговој зáповести ви мѡрате напѣстити  
ѡво мѣсто. 8. Нѣ под кáквѣм ýсловима нѣ можѣте  
прѣќи грáницу. 9. Дѣсет лѣдѣ ѡсѣђено је на смѣт.  
10. Јѣсте ли ѣкад шѣтали поред мѡра? 11. Ни рѣба  
без вѡде, ни звѣр без гѡре. 12. Двá чѡвека јáхалá су на  
кѡњима пѡред њѣгових кѡла. 13. Áко прѡђете поред

<sup>1</sup> 'Mind,' 'try to.'

<sup>2</sup> Continuously.

његове куће речеите му да ћу доћи вечèрас. 14. Пòпели смо се на врх брèга и разглèдали смо дивну околину. 15. Пòпèше ми се с тим наврх главе. 16. Мòја кућа је иза òнога брèга. 17. Узмите хартију из тè кùтије. 18. Идите дуж òвога пúта пà ћете наићи на јèдну кућу с дèсне стране. 19. Срби живе с òбе стране Саве и Дýнава. 20. Пòсле нèколико данà òна òде у госте свòјим рòдитељима. 21. Нисам знала да имàте јòш сестарà òсим òне кòју пòзнајем. 22. Данашње српске зèмље биле су нèкада под римском ùправом. 23. Под òвим кàменом има рàкòвā. 24. У ратàра црне рúке а бела<sup>1</sup> пòгача (proverb). 25. Чýвај беле пàре за црне дàне. 26. У млађèга пòговòра нèма. 27. Јà не мòгу упропàстити сèбе због твоје лúдè главе. 28. Он га је úдарио из шàле. 29. Нèмòјте никога гòнити из зàвисти. 30. Свè што чинимо, чинимо из лúбави према вàшем нàроду. 31. Òвāј пúт вòди кроз нàше сèло. 32. Дòћи ћемо кроз двā, трì дàна. 33. Сиђите низ òве стèпенице. 34. Мòја сòба је при зèмљи. 35. Вì кàо да<sup>2</sup> нисте при сèби кад тò рàдите. 36. Они ће се вратити сà мном. 37. С ким си, онàкì си. 38. Кàжи ми с ким се дрúжìш пà ћу ти рèћи кàкāв си. 39. Мòј брàт је пòгинуо у рату (бòју) прòтив Тùрāкā. 40. Òна се пòстиде и пòгледа прèдā се. 41. Ако нèмате чāшу наднèсите се над извор па пìјте. 42. Прèд тобòм је срèћа и нèсрећа. 43. Свè тò спúстите нà земљу. 44. Дàо се у мисли и ништа нè чује штā му се гòвори. 45. У свàкој кући има дìма. 46. Тò није у њèговòј власти. 47. Кò се од лúди крије бòље да га није (proverb). 48. Вòда òпере свè осим грèха (proverb). 49. Свāдили се вràпци око тýђе прòје (proverb). 50. Не чините ништа уз прòкос.

<sup>1</sup> Sc. nice.

<sup>2</sup> As if.



## SUBJECT-INDEX

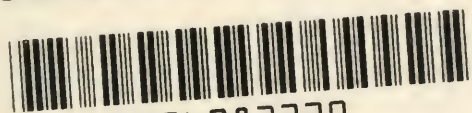
- Accents, 20 ff.  
Adjectives, 61 ff., 84 ff.  
Adverbs of manner, 182 ff.  
Adverbs of place, 180 f.  
Adverbs of quantity, 184.  
Adverbs of time, 179 f.  
Alphabet, 10 ff.  
Aorist, 81, 187 ff.  
Aspects of the verbs, 121 ff.  
Cases (use of the), 39 ff., 153 ff.  
Causal clauses, 211.  
Comparison, 84 ff.  
Concessive clauses, 212.  
Conditional, 81 ff., 178.  
Conditional clauses, 211, 212.  
Conjunctions, 189 f., 200–215.  
Consecutive clauses, 210.  
Date (the), 98.  
Days of the week, 98, 136 f.  
Definitive pronouns, 165.  
Degrees of comparison, 84, 87.  
Demonstrative pronouns, 55 f.  
Dialects, 22 ff.  
Enclitics, 21 f., 205–208.  
Final clauses, 210.  
Food, 43, 51, 52, cf. 141, 143, 144.  
Future, 73 ff., 169 f.  
Genitive after negative, 138.  
Gerunds, 194.  
Imperfect, 91, 188.  
Impersonal verbs, 114 ff.  
Indefinite adverbs, 170 ff.  
Indefinite pronouns, 170 ff.  
Interjections, 190 f.  
Interrogative pronouns, 76 ff.  
Marriage, 127, 157, 160.  
Meals, 143, 144.  
Money, 119, 121, 159.  
Months, 136 f.  
Nationalities, 57 f.  
Negations, 34, 113, 200–208.  
Numerals, 92 ff.  
Participles, 194 ff.  
Past (compound), 59 ff., 70, 148 ff.  
Personal pronouns, 54 f.  
Pluperfect, 71, 189.  
Possessive adjectives, 63 f.  
Possessive pronouns, 66 ff.  
Prepositional prefixes, 123 ff.  
Prepositions, 151 ff.  
Present, 31 ff., 101 ff.  
Price, 121, 159.  
Professions, 51 ff.  
Pronouns, 54, 66, 135, 165, 170, 205 ff.  
Questions, 32 ff, 113 f., 200–208.  
Reflexive pronouns, 55, 203 ff.  
Reflexive verbs, 114 ff.  
Relationships, 68 ff., 72.  
Relative clauses, 212, 213.  
Relative pronouns, 76 ff.  
Seasons, 166.  
Shopping, 51 ff.  
Subordinate sentences, 200 ff , 208 ff.  
Substantival suffixes, 38 f  
Substantives, 36 ff.  
Temporal clauses, 211.  
Time of day, 98 f.  
Verbs, 101–135, 139–148.  
Weather, 116, 117.  
Wishes, 208.

PRINTED IN ENGLAND  
AT THE OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS





U.C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



C004083220

